



4

【燃烧的圣光】

唐家三少引领新一轮幻想风暴强势来袭

本书是唐家三少的处女作 也是他得以一览群山的扛鼎之作  
书中某些素材来自于他和他妻子相识、相恋的真实故事

# Child of Light

## (光之子)

### Book 04

## Holy Light Awakening

Tang Jia San Shao

(唐家三少)

Story Description:

A Chinese fantasy webnovel under the sub-genre of “Magical Campus” by the author of Doulou Dalu, Kuang Shen and Shen Yin Wang Zuo. This is not a Xianxia.

The lazy Zhang Gong decides to learn light magic, a magic often ridiculed as useless for it's defensive nature. However, he eventually becomes the legendary Grand Magister. While trying to end the continent's east and west separation in order to unite all of the different races, he becomes every race's Child of Light.

Original Story can be found here: [Link](#)

# Volume 10

## Chapter 1: Arriving at the Stronghold

The one that worked the hardest amongst the group was Ke Lun Duo as he had to control his flight and constantly cast dark screens, while Mu Zi was also casting the dark screen. She did it in the easiest way possible as she placed one arm around my waist and constantly casting dark magic with the other.

As we arrived above the alliance army and looking at the densely packed ranks, everyone became tense as the cost of being discovered was to be surrounded and attacked. We moved rapidly and had crossed more than half the distance to our destination in a blink of an eye. Right at that moment, Ke Lun Duo softly exclaimed, “This isn’t good. We’ve been discovered. Everyone, be wary of what is coming from below.”

A few dark magic bullets and many arrows shot towards us, as expected. What strong bows they possessed? An arrow could actually reach such a high altitude.

I instantly adapted to the situation. “Our mage opponents shouldn’t be able to control their magic powers to such a distance. Everyone, be careful and try your best to dodge. Don’t fight those spells head on.” Fighting head on would only decrease our pace. Dodging these attacks should be the best solution.

The alliance troops of the Demon and Beast races had already come into contact with the human’s three kingdoms. Extremely loud calls of ‘Kill!’ were heard distinctly, even at such an altitude. The alliance troops had unexpectedly attacked Ström Fortress with almost half of its manpower, while the three human kingdoms made use of the natural stronghold to constantly use large caliber magic crystal cannon and various magic spells to counter. An endless stream of beautiful and dazzling magic cannon shells descended from the Ström Fortress’s lofty fortified walls. Furthermore, with every captivating ray of light, the

number of troops from Demon and Beast race's alliance would lessen. War was brutal. It was to kill or be killed. Whenever a large magic spell descended on the alliance troops, I clearly felt Mu Zi, who was in my embrace, shuddering. Looking upon such a scene, I inwardly promised that no matter what, I must succeed in negotiating with the three kingdoms.

Zhan Hu's anxious voice rang out, "Everyone, be careful. The enemies attacks are too numerous. We no longer have any choice but to use our protective battle spirit to withstand the magic head on."

Feeling apprehensive, I withdrew from my thoughts before surveying my surroundings. As expected from what Zhan Hu had said, an enormous quantity of dark magic was constantly surging over. Even though the strength of the spells weren't strong, the quantity was frightening. It had covered the entire one kilometre area.

Mu Zi in my embrace, "Not good! This is our Demon race's dark magic army troop/squad/regiment that are commencing their attack."

I coldly snorted. "Everyone, gather around me and activate your protective battle spirits below us." I still knew that combined powers were much stronger than separated powers. When the dozen of us gathered together, our defensive power increased drastically. Since we were also at a high altitude, we could withstand the attacks for a moment. However, our movement speed had greatly decreased. The dark magic army squad/troop/regiment had followed our movements, constantly shooting offensive attacks at us.

When facing such a crisis, my heart was calm instead as we were already not far from the Ström Fortress. I shouted, "Everyone, prepare to head forth at full speed!" Upon saying that, I glanced at Mu Zi in my embrace. I thought, 'With Mu Zi here, I definitely can't attack the Demons below us and just defend against their attack.' Thinking about that, I just maintained a small amount of battle spirit to sustain our flight and completely converted the Holy Sword's power and some of the battle spirit's power to magic power; an enormous Light Prism Shield appeared beneath the group. We seemed to have become a sun in the night, to

those below us.

Even though the defensive power of the Light Prism Shield wasn't great, the Light Prism Shield that I had improved could deal with those magic bullets. The large mass of dark magic bullet rebounded. I whispered to Mu Zi, "That shouldn't hurt them. It'll only cause some trouble for the Dark mages troop."

Mu Zi didn't say anything, but tightened her hand around my waist.

Under the protection of the Light Prism Shield, even though our aim was obvious, the alliance troops below us were unable to deal with us for the moment.

When everyone thought that that they could safely reached their destination. I suddenly felt an enormous powers surging towards us. It was not something that the large surfaced of the Light Prism Shield could withstand. I hastily shot numerous light blades downwards, using the Sukrad's staff. The strength of the opponent was beyond my expectations. With a few moves against the enemy, it had actually made my body's Qi and blood to roll over and over. My expression changed, I said, "Your Demon race have such powerful mages. We're at a disadvantage now." Even though the opponent wasn't stronger than me, we were in mid air so I couldn't recover my powers. The flight, fueled by battle spirit, was extremely taxing. If the opponent was to use another powerful magic spell to obstruct us, there wouldn't be a guarantee that we would safely reach the Ström Fortress.

At this moment, the eastern door of the Ström Fortress, on the right side of the fortress, flew open. A few thousand cavalrymen surged out. When I was curious as to why the humans had sent out such a small amount of cavalry to meet with the enemy, Zhan Hu exclaimed in shock, "It's second brother's Earth Dragon Cavalry Squad."

So, that was the case. Even though there were only a few thousand cavalrymen, it was like a violent gust of wind blowing through leaves, nothing was able to obstruct them. They had successfully plowed through a path among the alliance Demon and Beast race's troops.

A strong magic had come towards us again from beneath us. I was slightly angered by that before I told everyone, “Everyone, fly towards the right side’s city gate, where the Earth Dragon Squad has come out from. I can handle things here.” After saying that, I used Sukrad’s staff to draw out a dazzling gold magic hexagon in the air and shot it downwards. The strength of which was already beyond the advanced spells. Even though it didn’t have the strength of forbidden spells, it was close. This single attack, had already consumed 60% of my magic power. As the hexagon appeared, I told Mu Zi, “Quickly use wind magic to catch up with the rest.” Since I had used up most of my magic power, I had no choice, but to depend on Mu Zi’s power.

As Mu Zi chanted, the wind elements in the surrounding rapidly gathered. The surrounding movement of the air had continuously pushed us towards our destination. Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest, who were in front of us, had already reached the eastern door of Ström Fortress.

When the magic hexagon that I shot out quickly descended and collided intensely with the dark magic spell, the wind beneath Mu Zi and I instantly surged upwards. That enormous backlash in the air had made my body’s Qi and blood to boil from the shockwave. At that moment, my body became sluggish. Mu Zi immediately tightened her hold on me and chanted, “Oh great wind elements, I plead you to change into a tornado that rips everything apart.” A miniature tornado gathered behind us. With its assistance, Mu Zi and I momentarily shot towards the fortress like a shooting star.

I recovered for a breath with Mu Zi’s full power supporting us before I brandished Sukrad’s staff to dissipate the dark magic bullets that were pursuing us. After the ordeal, we had finally charged into the eastern entrance of the Ström Fortress.

## Chapter 2: Cruel War

The Earth Dragon army team that Big Brother Shan Yun led was invincible. In just a short moment, they had cleared a space in front of the Ström Fortress. When the defenders of the Ström Fortress saw that the situation was advantageous, they immediately sent out all of their forces; the main forces, heavy and light cavalries, all charged frantically towards the allied Demon and Beast races troops.

Mu Zi supported me as we slowly descended to the ground. When Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest saw that we landed safely, they gathered around us.

I frowned as I watched meat and blood splattered everywhere in the war field. “I didn’t expect that our cross over to the Ström Fortress had led to a war between the races. We originally came back for negotiation, but we’ve become the fuse for the start of the battles.”

Mu Zi consoled, “There shouldn’t be a problem as the Beast men had dispatched their Beamon army troops. With them, it definitely could sustain their morale. The allied troops of the Demon and Beast race has an advantage in the number of troopers. If the commander of the Ström Fortress isn’t stupid, he would withdraw the army and rely on the natural stronghold, Ström Fortress.”

I looked astonished at Mu Zi. This was the first time that I saw her wise and farsighted side.

Ke Lun Duo said, “What the princess said is right. Zhang Gong, what should we do now?” We were currently at the east city door. Since we had previously fought against the Demon race, the human soldiers had already treated us as their ally. Everyone was caught up with fighting the war that they, unexpectedly, didn’t pay any attention to us at the moment.

At this moment, the battlefield had a sudden change. It was as Mu Zi had mentioned previously; the beast men’s Giant Beamon Beast army troop had appeared. When I saw such a large beast for the first time, it gave me a fright. Its body was covered with heavy armour, an enormous

wolf teeth club in its hand, and was at least 4 meters tall. It had suddenly appeared before Big Brother Shan Yun's Earth Dragon army squad.

The Earth Dragon squad's warriors didn't care about anything, other than to charge forward. Unexpectedly however, the Earth Dragon's strong powers couldn't withstand the strength of the Giant Beamon Beast. The dragon gun couldn't pierce through their defense. Under the might of the enormous wolf teeth club, the dozen warriors of the Earth Dragon Army squad, who was right at the front, momentarily became meat paste with their Earth Dragons.

The Giant Beamon Beast Army Squad slowly, but orderly, advanced. They reclaimed the areas that the Earth Dragon Army team had taken, piece by piece. Zhan Hu sighed and said, "Even though the Earth Dragon Army squad is powerful, it still couldn't withstand the trump card of the Beast men. There was nothing in this world, even if it was heavy armoured soldiers, that could withstand the attack of the Giant Beamon Beast. Those fellows are just too abnormal. Look, the flag of the fort has changed."

The previous constantly waving red flag had turned to blue. The Earth Dragon Army Squad orderly retreated. The heavy and light armored cavalry protected their sides as they retreated back to the Ström Fortress in formation, without any disorder.

When the allied Demon and beast races troops were violently charging over, and the human's cavalries were almost unable to withstand their enemies, numerous elemental magic covered the sky and sprinkled downwards from the city walls of the fort. The advancement of the allied troops soldiers instantly decreased, excluding the Giant Beamon Beast from the Beast race.

The human calvaries took the opportunity to successfully retreat near the fortress. The large magic crystal cannon on the fort proved its importance. Small colourful shooting stars streaked across the vast sky and landed on the allied Demon and Beast races troops, even the Giant Beamon Beast wasn't unscathed. The Earth Dragon Army squad shielded the huge group of calvaries as they entered the fort in front of us. The

main forces of the allied Demon and beast races were stopped outside of the fort by the large magic crystal cannon.

The Earth Dragon Army squad had finally retreated back into the fort. Big Brother Zhan Hu quickly charged forward to welcome the last Earth Dragon cavalry that returned. I didn't even need to look attentively as that cavalry could only be Big Brother Shan Yun.

Shan Yun rapidly rode his Earth Dragon over towards us. Zhan Hu hollered, "Second Brother, I'm back!"

Shan Yun removed his face helmet and shouted, "Third Brother! I knew it was you guys. Quickly follow me into the city to prevent ambushes from the allied troops of the Demon and Beast races from happening."

We currently didn't have the time to reminisce so we hastily entered the Ström Fortress, following Shan Yun.

The fortress was filled with soldiers from the three kingdoms. The city wall was covered with infantries and mages that were responsible in defending the fortress. With the defence of the natural fortress, the mages could show their importance. There were also a couple of small mountain-like objects that should be the large magic crystal cannon; it was also because of them that stopped the allied troops of the Demon and Beast races from recklessly attacking the fort.

Shan Yun didn't have the time to tend to us as he ordered his aide-de-camp, "Quickly, get the overall statistics on the number of deaths and injuries. Report back to me after." The aide-de-camp followed his order.

Zhan Hu asked, "Are the people that were just dispatched from Xiuda?"

Shan Yun shook his head. "Not entirely. The main forces this time was the allied troops from Xiuda and Dalu. Currently, the fortress is separated into three parts. The calvaries from the various countries are under the command of our father, while the infantries are under the command of a wind heroic marshall from Dalu. Lastly, the mages are under the leader of the Royal mage's group from Aixia, Dun Yu Xi. With such segregation, it makes the ordering of the troops easier. It would be quicker to invade, retreat, and defend that way as well. Now, let's go to where the

commander division is.”

I hastily walked forward. “Big Brother Shan Yun, it won’t be good for us to head to the commander division. Can’t you first help arrange a place for us?” I was a wanted person from Aixia. If I headed there just like that, wouldn’t I be caught that way?

“You? You are?”

I smiled wryly. “I’m Zhang Gong.”

“Zhang Gong? Why has your appearance changed so much? Is it a disguise?”

I shook my head and sighed, “It’s hard to explain with just a few words. Let’s continue our conversation after we enter the city.”

Shan Yun instantly understood and pat his forehead before saying smilingly, “Look at my poor memory. Let’s head to my father’s interim prince’s mansion.”

Even though it was said to be a prince’s mansion, it was just a large courtyard with guards. The interior design was simple and crude. Shan Yun said that it was arranged by the prince. The prince said this originally, “We are to defend the human race and fight against the allied troops of the Demon and beast races. We aren’t here to enjoy life, so what’s the point in building up greatly? We can use that extra money to buy magic crystals.”

Hearing what Shan Yun had said, I couldn’t help, but to have good feelings towards the prince, who I hadn’t met before.

Shan Yun found some rooms for us to settle in. He also didn’t ask why there were two more people. At that moment, his aide-de-camp entered.

“Report!”

“How is the situation?”

“During this battle, there are 112 Earth Dragon cavalries, 1034 heavy armoured cavalries, and 2631 light armoured cavalries that died. In total, we’ve lost 3777 cavalries. The Prince requested that you should hastily

return back to the commander division."

The report had greatly shocked me. In such a short battle, it had unexpectedly resulted in nearly 4000 lives gone and that didn't include the loss from the Demon and Beast races. War was the world's greatest killer as the cries from numerous departed spirits permeated the battlefield.

Shan Yun frowned as he replied, "I understand. I'll head there now. You're to tend to my guests and don't slight them. Everyone, I'll head to the commander division and return after."

## Chapter 3: Telling the Situation in Detail

It was obvious that Big Brother Shan Yun's mood was extremely heavy. Those calvaries that went to battle and died were like family to him, but so many had died in that short period of time.....

After Big Brother Shan Yun left, we sat down in the room. I said, "Xiu Si and the rest should have arrived here already. Why haven't they come?"

Zhan Hu asked, "What shall we do next?"

I sighed. "The current situation isn't good as our coming over was too brazen. The two kingdoms, excluding Xiuda, definitely noticed our entry. If Aixia found out my identity, they definitely won't take things lying down. What is slightly beneficial to us is that the mages are under the command of Dun Yu Xi. My relationship with Teacher Xi is not bad."

Mu Zi said calmly, "It isn't the time to discuss this matter now. Everyone should have used up most of their powers from the previous cross over. We should immediately rest up to our peak state before the troublesome matters comes knocking on our door. We'll then be able to deal with future matters."

Everyone was convinced by what Mu Zi said so they sat properly before they cultivated.

Even though I had used a lot of my powers during the cross over, my recovery pace was abnormally fast. I discovered that the three powers in my body didn't need me to will it to make them circulate and they could automatically recover by themselves. They were individually circulating in different locations in my body, resulting in the rapid recovery to my peak state.

When I woke up from meditating, everyone was still meditating. Mu Zi had changed back to her original look again. While I looked at the gentle contours of her face, a warm and gentle feeling surged out from my heart.

Big Brother Shan Yun's aide-de-camp walked in and saw that I had woken up. He whispered, "You've awoken. Lord Shan Yun had instructed me that if there was anything you need, you can tell me."

I smiled with good will. “How’s the situation outside?”

The aide-de-camp replied, “We’re currently dealing with the aftermath of the battle. Those that were injured are getting treatments while they can. The situation is very tense as we don’t know when the allied troops of the Demon and Beast races will attack us again.

I instantly thought, ‘If I wanted to convince the three kingdoms, Xiuda will be the first kingdom to convince. If I obtained the support from Xiu Da, it would then be easier to convince the other two kingdoms. I’ll have to meet up with Big Brother Zhan Hu’s father, the prince.’

“When will Big Brother Shan Yun return?”

“I can’t determine when he will as there are cases where discussions take an extremely long time. You can have a rest first. I’ll inform you immediately once the Lord returns. I’ll head out now and will let someone to bring you some food later.”

After the aide-de-camp went out, Xiao Rou, who had changed into a squirrel form, came pouncing over. I extended a hand. She used her momentum to leap onto my shoulder, rubbing her fury head on my face. This little fella was too adorable. Everyone should still need a moment to recover. I held Sukrad’s staff in my hand as I walked out of the room. The yard was large. There were a couple of tall trees in my surrounding. When a gentle breeze blew over, rustling sounds of leaves could be heard. Even when some time had passed already, when I thought about the brutality at the battlefield, my heart felt a chill. Even though the previous cross over was extremely dangerous, it had solidified my resolution to convince the three kingdoms.

I didn’t know how the few teachers from Aixia were fairing. ‘Teacher Di, are you still doing well?’ If it wasn’t for that old fellow’s guidance, there won’t be the me today. He must be extremely dejected as I’m not by his side now. Teacher, don’t worry. I’ll definitely work hard for you. Currently, what I’m most worried about is my standpoint in Aixia. With Ke Zha’s rigorous schemes and deep foresight, he definitely wouldn’t accept my suggestion. Furthermore, I’m currently a wanted person by Aixia.

However, no one should be able to recognize me now.’

Thinking about that, I subconsciously caressed the scars on my face before smiling wryly. What was the point of blaming the gods and accusing others? It had already happened, so I should just settle the matters at hand before considering the others.

“Zhang Gong, where are the rest?” Big Brother Shan Yun returned.

“They’re still in the room cultivating their powers as they had used up quite a bit of them during the cross over.”

“That’s right, Zhang Gong, I haven’t asked you this. How did you get those scars?”

“You can say that I might be born under an ill star. When I fought against the Demon Emperor at the Demon race, I lost and his dark magic powers infiltrated my body right after. You should know that I’m a light attribute so after the light and dark elements collided, it had led to the corrosion of my meridians. It was already great that I still have my life, but my body had turned to this current look.”

Seeing my dejected look, Shan Yun obviously understood the immense sufferings that I had experienced. He patted my shoulder and replied, “Alright, my brother, don’t be so dejected. Brother will definitely find the best doctor to treat you. Now, tell brother what you have experienced during this trip to the Demon race.”

Regarding Shan Yun, I could completely trust him as I admired his noble charisma. I told him what had transpired from the start to the end. Shan Yun was shaken to his core as he listened and his expression constantly changed. Upon hearing that I had actually brought back the Demon princess and was preparing to negotiate with the three kingdoms, he couldn’t help, but to exclaim.

“.....That was what happened. It’s as if I was in a dream during this few months.”

“Zhang Gong, even though you had planned well, you should know that it’s highly unlikely that the negotiation will succeed. The couple

thousands of years of hatred between the human and the Demon and beast races isn't something that can be changed by you few people. However, even if that's the case, I'll still support you as I also wish that the world can recover it's peace and harmony. During this period of time, I'm filled with pain and exhaustion as I see my brothers beside me fall one after the other."

"Big Brother Shan Yun, thank you. With your support, how much will our success rate increase?"

Shan Yun smiled apologetically, "Don't be too optimistic. My support doesn't have any importance. The army from Xiuda is under my father. Moreover, there's His Majesty above my father. Our first task is to convince my father before convincing the rest. During the previous military discussion, the other two kingdoms had inquired who you guys were. I still haven't replied to them and just said that you're our allies. I'm also not clear about how things stand so I wanted to clarify with you before replying them. Your current biggest advantage is your God's inheritor identity. If you want to get the three kingdoms' approval to negotiate, that identity will be significant."

I nodded and replied, "I understand that. Actually, my disfiguration isn't a bad thing as at the very least, no one should be able to recognise me now. The other two kingdoms are also not familiar with Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest. Even though I'm currently wanted by Aixia, if I keep a low profile, I shouldn't be discovered by them. There are still some of my comrades that hasn't arrive here. They are my friends that participated in the competition with me when I previously returned in Xiuda. After they arrive, our words will be even more confident."

## Chapter 4: God's Emissary

"Did they also receive God's inheritance?"

I nodded.

Shan Yun sighed. "The task that you're shouldering is extremely important. Work hard! When should I bring you all to meet my father?"

A voice came from behind us. "Let's head there now. Since I'm back, I should at least meet up with that old fellow."

I turned my head and saw that Big Brother Zhan Hu and the others had come out.

"Second brother, where's eldest brother?" Zhan Hu asked.

"Our eldest brother is on standby on the frontline. The two of us can't return at the same time, as someone must be at the front to keep a lookout."

Zhan Hu nodded. "Let's go see our father now. Zhang Gong, you and I should head there. The princess should stay for now. Second brother, Zhang Gong should have told you everything about us, right?"

Shan Yun replied, "He did. You know father's temper. Whether this is successful or not will entirely depend on your eloquence. I'll try my best to help you out. I hope that with your God's inheritor's identity, you'll be able to convince him."

I said to Mu Zi, "Princess, I'll have to trouble you and Brother Ke to wait here with the other brothers. We will meet up with the prince first. Once we get his support, we'll then have hope in succeeding in our mission."

Mu Zi obediently nodded. "Be careful in everything you do, and come back soon." Seeing her attitude as though she was exhorting her husband, I looked at Ke Lun Duo, who looked as though nothing had happened. I then nodded, turned around, and walked out with Big Brother Shan Yun and Zhan Hu.

After leaving the prince's manor, I asked, "Where is the prince at now? Is he not coming back to the manor?"

Shan Yun sighed. “Seeing how tense the current situation is, how could my father have returned? He is keeping a constant lookout on the commander division. Don’t worry, my father has his resting area. We’ll head there to meet him.”

I said, all smiles, “Why should I worry? Who would be able to recognize me now?”

Zhan Hu said, “That’s right, second brother. Are there any good doctors here who could take a look at Zhang Gong? Those scars have affected him greatly.”

Before Shan Yun could reply, I cut in, “It’s unnecessary now. We should settle the main issue first.”

Shan Yun glanced at Zhan Hu, then told me, “I’ll look for a doctor tomorrow. The three kingdoms’ best doctors are gathered here.”

I smiled wordlessly.

On the way to the commander division, I discovered that the Ström Fortress wasn’t filled with only soldiers and mages. There were also many peddlers, of all kinds and shapes. The majority of them sold goods for consumption, armor, weaponry, etc. I asked in astonishment, “Big brother Shan Yun, why are the people here selling weapons and armours? Can they make a business here?”

“Of course, there’s profit for them. Who would be willing to do business for little profit? You should know that it has already been a few hundred years since we last fought in a war. The few hundred years of peace have greatly weakened the three Kingdoms’ battle power and war supply reserves. There are times where we don’t have a choice but to buy from the peddlers, which means a market had been established. Currently, magic crystals, bows and arrows are most in demand. Our three kingdoms’ fighting power is much inferior to the demon’s and beast’s alliance. If it wasn’t for the Ström Fortress, the eastern continent would have already fallen into enemy hands. This is one of the main reasons why I support you in trying to negotiate with them.”

Seeing that the situation was so strained, my resolution to prepare the

negotiation increased.

“Take a look, that’s the commander division.”

Looking in the direction that Shan Yun pointed to, one had to wonder whether this was really a commander’s division. It simply looked just like a castle. When compared to the interim prince’s manor, they were as different as the heavens and earth.

The commander’s division was arranged just like the Royal Palace in the Demon’s Royal city. If the commander’s division was the inner palace, the entire Ström Fortress would be the outer palace. The commander division was surrounded with lofty city walls, and was being defended by a large group of armed forces. Even though I couldn’t see the interior, I could imagine that the construction would be magnificent.

Seeing my dumbstruck look, Shan Yun said, smilingly, “You’re shocked, right? I was also shocked when I first came here. After a while, I found out that there’s a purpose in building it this way. Even if the Ström Fortress were to be broken through, with the defence of the commander’s division, it would definitely be able to hold for quite a long time. The design of the Ström Fortress is extremely meticulous. You’ll discover that in the future, the Ström Fortress won’t be fortified. Do you know why?”

At first I was stunned, but then my thoughts turned around quickly. In a moment, I understood the key reason for this. Unruffled, I replied, “It should be due to the possibility that the demons and beasts could occupy it, right?”

Shan Yun replied, with praise, “That’s right. If we had large quantities of magic crystals, no matter how many Demons and beasts there were, we wouldn’t need to fear them. However, currently, we can’t afford to do that. Even if we were to purchase them for high prices, from the entire eastern continent, it wouldn’t be able to satisfy the demands of the Ström Fortress.”

I became apprehensive. I hadn’t known that the demand for magic crystal was that high. Even though I had lots of magic crystals for the negotiation, I couldn’t take them out. If not, once the human race was in

power, how could they still agree to negotiate with the Demon race?!

Whilst chatting, we had already reached the moat outside of the commander's division. After stepping on the drawbridge, the surrounding soldiers respectfully said, "Greetings to Lord Shan Yun." A commander's aura unconsciously radiated from Shan Yun's body. After saying 'En!' in acknowledgement, he led us into the commander's division.

Even though I had made mental preparations, I was still startled after I walked into the commander's division. The interior was filled with layered blockhouses. Each and every construction was made from heavy granites. It could be said it was flawless in defence.

Shan Yun pointed at an enormous stone house in the center. "That's the genuine commander's division. We'll discuss any important matters in there. My father's resting quarters are in that stone room at the side."

The entrance to the prince's resting stone room was guarded by eight soldiers. Shan Yun took the lead and walked forth before asking, "Is my father in?"

The leader of the soldiers replied respectfully, "The prince and Lord Lei Yun are inside."

Zhan Hu said, pleasantly surprised, "It's great that eldest brother is here as well. Let's quickly enter." Upon saying that, he took the lead and charged in. Since we had come with Shan Yun, the guards didn't stop him.

Shan Yun dragged me along, saying, "Let's head in as well. Look at your big brother, he's just like a child in a grown-up's body."

The stone house was arranged in a simple and unadorned fashion. There was a large bed, a study table and a few chairs in the room. There was also a four meter dragon gun hanging on the wall, slanted. Big Brother Zhan Hu's tall build blocked my sight, making it impossible for me to look at the prince's appearance.

However, I noticed that there was a tall and sturdy person beside him. That person unexpectedly looked more ferocious than Zhan Hu, who was two meters tall. His shoulders were broad, and he had a tough and stocky

build. He wore a black warrior robe, with a long sword attached to his waist. He had brows like double-edged swords and tiger-like eyes. His nose was straight, and his jaws squared, giving him an extremely mighty appearance.

I knew he had to be a valiant general on the battlefield. There wasn't a need for an introduction, as I recognized him from his appearance. He had to be Zhan Hu's eldest brother--Lei Yun.

## Chapter 5: God's Power

When Lei Yun saw my ghastly appearance, he couldn't help but frown. "Second and third brother, who is that?"

Zhan Hu turned around before instantly moving to my side and laying an arm on my shoulder, then said smilingly, "Big brother, he's my sworn brother."

Just as I wanted to greet Lei Yun, I found that two cold rays were shot toward me. I was alarmed, and the magic power in my body couldn't help but automatically release a faint gold protection barrier around me. I was shocked that the two cold rays were from an old man's eyes, sitting on the leader's seat of honor.

Even though that old man was sitting, his bold and powerful build was obvious. He was wearing an official robe, with a jade belt at his waist. He wore an eight-jeweled purplish gold crown on his head. A king's aura surrounded him. When he felt the protective barrier from my body, a glimmer of shock flashed past his eyes, as he retracted his thick icy gaze. It was expected that he had a king's appearance; it was no wonder that he had managed to guide his three sons to be such outstanding people.

"Are you the light mage, Zhang Gong Wei, who is wanted by the Kingdom of Aixia?" The tone of the prince's voice was extremely heavy. Even though he looked calm, once he opened his mouth, it naturally gave off a domineering, powerful, yet not angry voice.

I didn't expect that he would be able to pinpoint my identity. I looked at Lei Yun, who had his brows tightly furrowed, then I puffed out my chest and greeted him. With a respectful, yet not meek bow, I spoke, "My greetings to you, Your Highness. I'm Aixia's Zhang Gong Wei."

Zhan Hu added, "Father, my brother is the world's youngest Magister. His teacher is the Aixia's Royal Intermediate Magic Academy's principal, Teacher Di."

Slightly angwered, the prince said, "Have I asked you? I haven't yet settled the matter with you running away again, so just stand at the side

for now. Without my instructions, you're not allowed to casually interrupt."

Big Brother Zhan Hu, who was considered to matchless in the world, was just as Shan Yun had said. He looked just like a kid who had done something wrong. He stuck out his tongue before obediently going to stand in a corner, not uttering a single word.

"Zhang Gong Wei, I have heard about some of your matters from the reports given to my kingdom by Aixia. They said that you were once a heroic genius that would arouse the heaven's jealousy, but you released the Demon race's princess due to your personal feelings, leading you to abandon yourself, and was thereby listed as wanted."

When Shan Yun heard the prince's ill words, he immediately explained, "Father, Zhang Gong isn't that type of person....." He stopped his explanation as the prince looked at him with an icy cold gaze.

I sighed gently before saying calmly, "If His Highness is interested, I can tell you all of my experiences for you to judge whether I'm a traitor to humanity. I hereby swear that if I were to speak any empty words, I'm willing to take on five lightnings that would result in my death."

The prince glanced at me before replying in a softer tone, "Alright, tell me."

I took a deep breath and tidied up my slightly unorganized train of thoughts before telling slowly, "What Big Brother Zhan Hu said was right. I'm really Aixia's youngest generation Magister. My experiences were rather smooth sailing. When I was young, I met with a good teacher that built up my good magic foundation. After that, I successfully got into the Royal Intermediate Magic Academy. I became a disciple under Teacher Di by chance. My magic level abruptly improved under that old man's meticulous tutelage. Finally, before entering the Royal Advanced Magic Academy, I successfully reached the Magister realm. I had a seemingly bright future ahead of me in Aixia, but I managed to land myself in the current situation. To be honest, the majority of the judgements that the Kingdom of Aixia have about me are accurate. I

really fell in love with the Demon's Princess and rescued her from imprisonment. However, it wasn't that I've abandoned myself, but rather, I've my reasons in doing so. Your Highness should understand that I wouldn't just give up my wondrous future just to rescue my beloved woman. If that were the case, currently, I wouldn't be standing before you."

The prince nodded, indicating me to continue.

Zhan Hu and his brothers were quietly listening to what I said, but they each had a different expression on their faces; Lei Yun had a curious expression, Shan Yun had a calm expression and Big Brother Zhan Hu had a focused expression.

I cleared my throat before continuing, "Initially, Big Brother Zhan Hu and I met each other in the Kingdom of Xiuda. It could be said that we couldn't befriend each other without fighting each other. I went to Xiuda under Teacher Di's order. Xiuda was my first stop, excluding learning from experiences. You should know Teacher Wen from your kingdom's knight academy. I was his student for half a year."

The prince replied, "I heard this from Shan Yun. The group they put together was defeated by your hands."

I scratched my head. "It was just luck."

The prince's voice changed. "In battles, there's no luck. If it was a life or death engagement, victory and defeat could have been determined in a momentary slip. His loss is his loss. You don't have to flatter me. Continue relating your experiences, those you've just mentioned aren't the main points."

My face flushed before I replied, "Yes, when I came to the Kingdom of Xiuda, it was to improve my knowledge and to pass the warrior's training in order to strengthen my abilities. However, that wasn't the only purpose. My purpose was to obtain the Legendary Holy Sword."

After hearing that, Lei Yun gasped. It was obvious that he wasn't aware of that matter, but the prince obviously knew about it, as his expression remained unchanged.

“Thus, I invited Big Brother Zhan Hu and a few friends from Xiuda to investigate the location of the Holy Sword in the Kingdom of Dalu. It was unknown to us whether it was our luck or predestined that those Divine Instruments, which hadn’t appeared even once in thousands of years, were discovered by us. At that time, we also met with the will of the God King. The God King told us that the world would face a crisis, the resurrection of the Monster King. He bestowed a divine instrument on each of us, and he instructed us to completely eliminate the Monster King’s clone. If not, it would lead to the eradication of various races. Big Brother Zhan Hu should have told you all of this.”

The prince nodded. “I’ve heard him mentioned this before, but your words are too unbelievable. How am I supposed to believe you only with this magic-like display of armour? You should know that if this matter is genuine, it’ll affect all of our decisions.”

I interlocked my hands in front of my chest, emitting a dazzling light ray that enveloped my body; a white light appeared in front of my chest, and a small silver sword appeared before me. Divine aura permeated the entire stone house. Lei Yun hastily went to shield the prince. It was obvious that he didn’t trust me much, with my current ghastly appearance.

I felt the magic power and battle spirit in my body surge constantly towards the Holy Sword, and fuse with its power in my chest, making it rather effortless for me to sustain the Holy Sword.

## Chapter 6: Persuading the Prince

I circulated the Holy Sword in the air before retrieving it back into my body before saying smilingly, “There’s nothing that can imitate the Holy Sword’s divine power. You should be able to believe us now, right?”

The Prince asked with a frown, “With your current power, can you defeat the Monster King?”

“Of course, it’s impossible now. I couldn’t bring out even just 1% of the Holy Sword’s power. Please let me continue explaining first. After I received the acknowledgement of the God and became a God’s inheritor, I had parted ways with Big Brother Zhan Hu and my other friends to head back to Aixia. In order to gain more control of the Holy Sword, I had to improve my cultivation. Suddenly, one day, there was an alert signal that came from the Royal Palace as there was an assassination that was happening towards the newly crowned king, Emperor Ke Zha. I, along with the Royal Advanced Academy’s teachers and students, rushed towards the palace. Under Teacher Zhen’s assistance, I successfully cast out a light forbidden spell, which led to the near annihilation of the assassins; only two assassins survived. I discovered that they were of the Demon race. Moreover, one of the Demon survivors was a student that I was deeply in love with at the Royal Advanced Academy, who is also the Demon’s princess mentioned in Aixia’s wanted order.”

The prince suddenly waved his hand to stop me from continuing before he asked in astonishment, “You said that you were able to use a forbidden spell?”

Currently, I must not be humble as I need to prove my powers after obtaining God’s inheritance. I would only be able to convince the prince by that way. I nodded. “That is right, but it was with the assistance of Teacher Zhen, with our combined magic power and the power of the Holy Sword in my body, I was successfully able to use a forbidden spell.”

“Continue saying your experiences.”

“At the moment that I discovered Mu Zi’s identity, I was really

impetuous. After a while, I gradually calmed down, but still wanted to rescue her. Even though I knew that it'll ruin my future, I did it without any hesitation. There are two reasons for that. Firstly, if I had let the Kingdom of Aixia to execute the Demon's princess, it undoubtedly will lead to set off a ruckus as the Demon's princess was the successor of the Demon Emperor. If the successor was killed, you should be able to imagine that the demon race will carry out a frantic retaliation. I thought that the Monster King that the God King had handed over to us should be our real enemy and that we mustn't give any chances for the Monster race to invade us. Thus, I had chosen to rescue the Demon race's princess, giving up my future, in order to increase the success rate of the task that the God King has given to us. Of course, I can't deny that I had personal feelings in doing so as well, since I was really in love with her." I had deemphasized my personal feelings for Mu Zi at the end of the explanation. Of course, only I knew that when I rescued Mu Zi, at least 95% of why I carried it out, was due to personal feelings. As for the God King's order and so on, I really had thought about it before, but it was the secondary reason.

The prince was extremely satisfied with my honesty as he said smilingly, "What are you planning to do by coming here? From what you said, you shouldn't be here to help us to fight against the alliance of the Demon and Beast races."

This old fellow's thinking speed was extremely quick so talking to him was less laborious. I looked at Zhan Hu before continuing, "After fleeing Aixia, I had met up with Big Brother Zhan Hu, where we experienced a life or death battle against the Monster race. If it wasn't for some of our friends helping us, we wouldn't be able to eliminate those Monster beasts. After the battle, I had decided to head to the Demon race to negotiate with the Demon Emperor, in order to unite all of the races to fight together against the Monster race."

Lei Yun couldn't help, but to say, "To negotiate with the Demon Emperor? Have you lost your mind? How can we humans negotiate with the Demon race?"

I said smilingly, “Big Brother Lei Yun, thank you for your concerns. But even though it was dangerous, facts have proven that we have succeeded.”

When I said that, Lei Yun and the prince exclaimed. This was the first time where the prince had lost his composure as he anxiously asked, “What did you say? You really managed to convince the Demon Emperor?”

Zhan Hu interrupted, “That’s right, father, we really managed to convince the Demon Emperor. But Zhang Gong had paid a hefty price in order to negotiate with the Demon Emperor. Did you think that what he looks like right now was his original appearance? Zhang Gong was originally an exceptionally handsome fellow. It was due to battling against the Demon Emperor that led to the infiltration of dark elements into his body, leading to the corrosion of his body, which led to his current looks. Only us, who has always been by his side, clearly knows much he had contributed for the world’s peace and harmony.”

The prince was emotionally moved as he told me warmly, “Quickly, tell me in details what happened.”

Thus, I told everything that had transpired at the Demon race’s territory once. When the prince heard that I had unexpectedly brought back the Demon’s princess for negotiation, he was so shocked that his jaw fell. After that, Zhan Hu had told me that this was the first time that he saw his father lose his self-control to such an extent.

The prince muttered, “The way you all do things are really too audacious. Aren’t you afraid that we might capture the princess to pressurize the Demon Emperor?”

I was alarmed and said solemnly, with a sudden light ray that shot out from my eyes, “If the three human kingdoms really wants to do that, they must step over my dead body.” My tone was so icy that the temperature in the stone room had decreased drastically, even Zhan Hu couldn’t help but to shudder.

The prince fumingly said, “It can’t be that you will go against humanity for that Demoness, right?”

I coldly snorted. “It’ll be you all that force our hands. Could it be that our human race are so nearsighted that they don’t know that peace and harmony is the best outcome for us? If us humans don’t have prestige, then are we still counted as humans? Since I have already agreed to the Demon Emperor that I’ll bring Mu Zi back safely, I’ll definitely keep to the promise. With my current powers, if I were to fight with all of my might against the human race, the loss that you’ll suffer will definitely not be small.”

The prince glared enraged at me after hearing what I said, while I looked at his gaze unyieldingly. The atmosphere’s killing intent had made it impossible for Zhan Hu and his brothers to intercept.

“Reporting!” A foreign voice broke through the silence.

The prince withdrew his icy gaze and said solemnly, “Come in.”

A dispatch soldier came rushing in. “Your Highness, there’s an unidentified creature that suddenly appeared in the sky and is rapidly advancing towards Ström Fortress. It seems that it had come over from the Heavenly Falling Mountain. The other two kingdoms request your presence in the commander division to discuss this matter.”

The prince glared at me and just as he was heading over, I suddenly shouted, “Wait a minute Your Highness!”

The prince stopped in his steps and asked, “What do you want?”

I asked the soldier, “Where is that unidentified creature now and approximately how does it look like?”

## Chapter 7: Xiao Jin Returns

The dispatch looked stunned as he looked at the prince. After the prince indicated for him to answer my question, he said, “It’s an enormous creature that is a few tens of meters long. It looks similar to the legendary dragon and is currently circulating the Ström Fortress. Lord Dun Yu Xi has already ordered the aiming of 10 magic crystal large cannons at it. If it makes any suspicious movements, we would immediately fire.”

I asked the prince, “Can you do me a favour? The creature that is flying in the sky is my friend. It’s a dragon and is a five clawed one.” Actually, Dun Yu Xi had seen Xiao Jin before, but it wasn’t a surprise that he couldn’t recognise him as Xiao Jin’s current size was many times bigger than what he originally looked like; his increase in size would be unimaginable to anyone.

Zhan Hu said, pleasantly surprised, “Ah! Has Xiao Jin returned?”

Upon hearing Xiao Jin’s news, it had made me extremely excited as I replied smilingly, “It must be him.”

Amazed, the prince asked, “You also have dragons?”

I nodded. “He could be counted as my magic beast. Can you please help me with that?”

The prince nodded. “I’ll try. I shall say that it’s Shan Yun’s dragon race friend that has come specifically to help us eliminate the Demon race.”

I contemplated. “I think it’s best we don’t tell them that he is a dragon and just say that it’s a magic beast. You only have to stop the city guards from attacking him. I’ve ways to summon his descent, to come directly to your prince manor. As for the previous matters we’ve discussed, let’s continue discussing after settling my friend down. What is your opinion on that?”

The prince replied, “Actually, what you said previously was extremely right. After I’ve made some arrangements here, I’ll immediately head back to report these matters to His Majesty.”

Zhan Hu replied, amazed, “Father, with what you just said, does that mean that you support us?”

The prince smiled wryly. “How can I not? Zhang Gong has convinced me. Moreover, my son is one of the God’s inheritors and the remaining four inheritors are also from our Xiuda. I feel proud of you on these matters. Shan Yun has also mentioned to me before that he didn’t wish to fight, and since you two are standing on his side, I can’t not think this through. I believe that His Majesty should consider my opinion.”

I bowed deeply towards the prince and said, gratified, “Thank you, uncle.”

The prince said smilingly, “Uncle? I like being addressed that way by you. Zhang Gong, you’re an extremely outstanding youth. You just have to do whatever you want and I’ll try my best to support you. Alright, first I’ll help you to meet up with your dragon friend. Lei Yun, you’re to come with me. After I’ve discussed with the other two Kingdoms, I’ll let Lei Yun notify you. Zhang Gong, you should first inform that large fellow to not commence any attacks on the ground. If you don’t, it won’t be easy to deal with the situation. You should all return to the prince’s manor. Shan Yun, take great care of them.”

“Yes, father.”

“Ah! Zhan Hu, be more attentive. You’re the one that I’m most worried about.”

Zhan Hu said with a mischievous smile, “Don’t worry, old pops. This time, even if you chase me away, I won’t leave.”

The prince helplessly shook his head before bringing Lei Yun away. After obtaining the acknowledgement of the prince, I felt much better as I headed back to the interim prince manor with Big Brother Shan Yun and Zhan Hu.

.....

Once we stepped into the large entrance of the prince’s manor, we heard joyful laughters within.

Shan Yun asked the guard at the side, “What happened?”

The guard replied respectfully, “A few people just arrived and had said that they were your friends from the Kingdom. The few friends that you have brought over seemed to know them as well, so we let them in. They are at the drawing room right now.”

Shan Yun looked at me and I had already understood what was happening and said elatedly, “It should be that Xiu Si and the rest have arrived. Let’s head in quickly.”

As I had predicted, once I opened the door, I saw Xiu Si’s familiar body figure. I shouted excitedly, “Big Brother Xiu Si, you’ve finally come!”

Xiu Si’s body stiffened before he gradually turned around. He suddenly dashed over and flashed to my side. With both of his hands that clenched tightly on my shoulders, he replied excitedly, “Zhang Gong, you must have suffered. Everyone has already told me what happened to you.” Xiu Si’s gaze was sharper when compared to before. Looking at his collected expression, I knew with just a glance that his martial skills had improved drastically.

I sighed gently. “It’s already over. That’s right, where is Xin Ao and Gao De?”

“Zhang Gong, we’re here.”

Two giant-like lofty body figures appeared behind Xiu Si. Just like Xiu Si, the feelings that I felt from them were different. They no longer had domineering auras, but rather, they gave off an inscrutable feeling. It seemed that they weren’t idle for these past few months.

Zhan Hu said smilingly, “You few fellows are remarkable. Your recent improvements are definitely great.”

Xiu Si said, “It’s all due to the five elders’ tutelage. Even though it was tough, our martial skills improved a lot. That’s right, Zhang Gong, your precious dragon is still in the sky. How are you going to deal with that?”

I asked, “Why did he come together with you? With Xiao Jin’s speed he should have arrived much quicker than you all.”

Xiu Si smiled wryly, “You’re still commenting on that? That fellow has given us a lot of trouble. We were training that day when he came. The brothers that were patrolling the perimeters didn’t recognise him and thought that he was from the Monster race, and so, they started to fight against Xiao Jin. You should know of Xiao Jin’s tyrannical strength and it was fortunate that he didn’t kill, but he injured about 100 of our brothers. It was the combined powers of the five elders that subdued him. Even though I’ve seen him before, the change in his appearance was too drastic that I wasn’t able to recognise him. The great thing was that he knew how to speak and said that he had come to deliver a letter to me. Just like that, the misunderstanding was resolved. After he delivered the letter he wanted to rush back, but I thought that if he were to reach Ström Fortress, he’ll definitely encounter the same situation. I then pleaded with him to set off together with us to prevent more troubles from happening. That fellow was extremely unwilling, but we were lucky that the five elders were able to subdue him. Thus, it led to his spirit dampening. Otherwise, Ström Fortress’s sky and earth would have been turned upside down by him.”

Embarrassed, I smiled. “It was my fault that I didn’t instruct him properly. Big Brother Xiu Si, you had thought it through. I have already asked someone to facilitate Xiao Jin’s coming over. Once the Ström Fortress gives up on attacking him, I’ll summon his descent.”

Xiu Si nodded before he grimly replied, “You’ve suffered so much during this trip to the Demon race. How is the negotiation with the three kingdoms coming along? Are they willing to negotiate?”

I lightly shook my head. “It’ll be extremely difficult. However, I’ve already negotiated with the prince from Xiuda, who is the commander here. He’s also Big Brother Zhan Hu’s father. That old fellow has already agreed to help us by suggesting our matters to the ruler of Xiuda. If we successfully obtain Xiuda’s support, everything will be much easier. Big Brother Xiu Si, how many brothers did you bring along with you this time?”

Xiu Si smiled mysteriously before pulling me to a corner and whispered,

"I've brought over 500 of them with me and they are all elites."

## Chapter 8: Large Increase in Power

I looked at him, amazed. “You brought so many people with you? Won’t that be half of our manpower?”

Xiu Si shook his head. “You’re wrong. Our current numbers is no longer 1000 people, but is 3000 people.”

I replied jubilantly, “We’re developing at such a rapid pace.”

Xiu Si sighed. “It’s all due to the five elders. They have recruited the majority of the God Village’s robust males, which reached a thousand of them; they also recruited some of the villagers that have good attributes. In total, it reached 3000 of us. Those that came with me were the elites of the God Village. The negotiation between the Human with the Demon and Beast races is extremely crucial. We should first settle the conflict between the races before we’re able to fight against the Monster King, that’s why I’ve brought so many people over. The five elders continue to train the rest at the base. Our base had already shown signs of formation. With so many experts building it, currently, it looks like a small castle. Once you return to the base, you won’t be able to recognize it.”

I became much more confident in dealing with the Monster King after hearing what Xiu Si said.

Xiu Si continued, “With our current power, it shouldn’t be hard for us to charge out from the Ström Fortress. If we want the three kingdoms to agree to negotiate, we’ve got to display our might. What you have written in the letter is very accurate, we’ll need to use our God’s inheritor’s identity. When we get the opportunity, we should display our powers in public to let them understand that we’re really God’s inheritors. After that, we’ll act as a go-between, and when conditions are right, success will follow naturally.”

I replied smilingly, “I’ll need to trouble you in directing our group from now on. With the wise and farsighted Big Brother Xiu Si around, little brother is willing to follow and accept any errands you need me to do.”

Xiu Si knocked on my head before saying with a sly smile, “You brat, are

you trying to shirk from your responsibility? Don't forget, you're our leader. If you want to push all of your responsibilities on me, it'll be impossible. I, at most, can be your good-for-nothing adviser to give suggestions, but for the specifics, we'll need you as the leader of our brilliant team to direct us. Hehe!"

My thoughts were caught on by him. I smiled wryly, "You don't need to be so crafty. Won't it be the same thing if you lead us?"

Xiu Si continuously shook his head. "Don't even think about it. To be truthful, not many of our brothers want to be in power as we love our freedom. After the important matters are settled and we're still alive, let's roam the world. I want to go and check out the Demon and Beast races to experience their different cultures."

Xiu Si had thought about the same thing that I was thinking. "That's great, I also have the same thoughts. It's decided then. But don't you push away your responsibilities. We'll have to work hard to achieve that kind of lifestyle."

Xiu Si smiled bitterly. "Do I even have a choice on whether I can push aside my responsibilities or not?" Upon saying that, the two of us broke into laughters.

Gao De and Xing Ao walked over. "What are you talking about to be so joyful? Zhang Gong, is that girl the Demon's Princess? She doesn't look extremely beautiful. Did you become wanted by Aixia for her?"

Xiu Si glared at Gao De. "Stop touching Zhang Gong's sore spot."

I sighed. "She's Mu Zi, the Demon's Princess. Her current look isn't her original look as she has changed her appearance. Our relationship is finished. How can I meet people with my ghostly looks?"

Xing Ao suddenly laughed out loud.

Xiu Si saw that I was frowning and pulled on Xing Ao, before he fumingly said, "You brat, what are you laughing for? Don't you know how much suffering Zhang Gong is currently feeling?"

Xing Ao replied smiling, "I'm laughing at his idiocy as he placed you,

the peerless Divine doctor at his side, but is still constantly sighing. It can't be that your Sky God's horn can't treat his scars, right?"

Xiu Si and I simultaneously lit up. Xing Ao, who was usually slow witted, had unexpectedly gave me a chance to reborn.

I looked at Xiu Si, filled with anticipation. My heart beat frantically. If he could cure my scars, I could get back with Mu Zi again. This enticement was too big towards me.

Xiu Si nodded. "If nothing goes wrong, it should work."

I leaped with joy. "What are we waiting for? Let's quickly start!"

At that moment, a big person came in from outside. It was Lei Yun. He walked towards me and shouted, "Brother Zhang Gong! You should keep your dragon to stop making the people worry at the fortress. Father has already settled the matters with the two kingdoms."

I replied politely, "Big Brother Lei Yun, Thank you."

Lei Yun smiled candidly. "What's there to thank for? You're my brother's brother so you're naturally my brother."

I stood at the center of the courtyard and raised the Sukrad's staff and mentally started to call out to Xiao Jin. Gold light rays rippled around me, with me as its center. Lei Yun said, dumbstruck, "Magic is really mystical."

Since we were near to each other this time 'round, Xiao Jin quickly felt my calls. A clear and joyful dragon roar could be heard from the sky. A gold figure appeared in the blue sky, which was giving out gold light rays, making it seem as though a small gold sun had appeared.

I hollered in excitement, "Xiao Jin!"

Xiao Jin's body gradually magnified in our vision. It was obvious that he was charging downward towards the manor. When he saw the courtyard of the prince's manor, Xiao Jin stretched his wings open, decreasing the speed of his descent. I knew that he was doing the same thing as before to glide onto the ground. When everyone saw his startling speed, they

immediately dodged to the side. I also flew towards the entrance of the building, giving it sufficient space to land.

However, his landing speed this time was really too fast. Even though his wings had decreased his momentum, the momentum was still too strong and he didn't control it well. 'Hong!' Xiao Jin heavily landed on the ground.

I anxiously called out, "Xiao Jin!" as I dashed towards him.

Xiao Jin flapped his enormous wings twice before he slowly climbed out from the ditch. The soil and dirt on his wings were scattered all over me. He wobbly walked out from the ditch and used his front claws to scratch his head, shaking his large head. It was obvious that he was dizzy from the fall.

I asked concerned, "Are you alright, Xiao Jin?"

Hearing my voice, Xiao Jin's neck straightened. He excitedly chipped out, "Master!" He moved his two large wings, momentarily covering me within. A sudden immense power had made me unable to breathe; my entire body's bones were being grinded by the pressure that he was giving out. I hastily used circulated my battle spirit to withstand the pressure. Xiao Jin found that something wasn't right so he hastily released me.

## Chapter 9: Healing Dream

I sat on the ground and took in a few deep breaths before asking snappily, “Are you trying to kill me with your strength?”

Xiao Jin, embarrassed, replied, “I’m sorry Master. I was too excited so I didn’t control my strength well. Please stop being mad at me.”

I said smilingly, “Alright, I’ll forgive you. Please be more attentive next time. My bones can’t withstand your torture. That’s right, when I’ve sent you to deliver a letter, did you give Big Brother Xiu Si and the rest a lot of trouble?”

Xiao Jin constantly shook his head before replying, feeling wronged, “They started it and I didn’t fight back. I just played with them using my wings.”

Xiu Si said smiling, “Forget it, Zhang Gong, stop blaming him. It’s all a misunderstanding.”

Xiao Jin kept on nodding his head as if he were a chicken eating rice grains. “Right! Right! Right! It’s just a misunderstanding. Big Brother Xiu Si is so great. Ah! No, Master is also great.” Seeing his adorable behaviour, the crowd burst into laughter.

Lei Yun walked in front of Xiao Jin and sized him up. “This is a dragon? It’s so beautiful.”

Xiao Jin puffed out his chest. “That’s certainly the case as I’m the prettiest dragon in the world.”

Xiu Si said, “Enough. Stop boasting. Zhang Gong, I should treat your wounds as soon as possible since the earlier it’s treated, the greater the possibility that it gets cured.”

Since Xiao Jin had arrived, Mu Zi had also come out. After hearing that Xiu Si was going to treat my wounds, her lovable body flashed to my side and hugged one of my arms, before saying excitedly, “Zhang Gong, can your scars be cured? That’s great! Really great!”

I replied indifferently, “You’re really mindful of my scars. There’s no

guarantee that it can be cured. Princess, please watch your conduct.”

Mu Zi released her arms and replied, choked by her emotions, “Zhang Gong, you know that I don’t mean that. You.....”

I raised my hands to stop Mu Zi from continuing to speak before I sighed and said, “Let’s continue this discussion after my treatment. I also wish for these scars be cured.”

Mu Zi seriously nodded and said resolutely, “It will definitely work! It has to! Big Brother Xiu Si, I’ll be leaving Zhang Gong in your hands.”

Xiu Si smiled before replying, “Don’t worry, princess. I’ll do my best.”

Xiu Si and I walked into the stone room.

Big brother Zhan Hu said, “Brothers, let’s surround the house to protect Zhang Gong while he’s getting treated.”

‘En!’ Dong Ri, Shan Jian and the others agreed as they surrounded the stone house.

Xiu Si and I sat on the bed, face to face. Xiu Si said, “Zhang Gong, take off your clothes.”

I was actually extremely nervous, for I shuddered while removing my clothes. When Xiu Si looked at my scar filled body, he couldn’t help but take in a cold breath. With teary eyes, he said, “Brother, you’ve suffered such a severe injury. Ai! Brother will do his best to treat you, though it might hurt a little later. Please bear with it.”

I firmly nodded. “Let’s do this, Big Brother Xiu Si.”

Xiu Si replied, “You’re to keep your magic power within your body and don’t fight against my power. Now, relax your body and be attentive. I’m starting now.” A pure, sparkling and translucent moon white small horn appeared in Xiu Si’s hand. As he chanted, the horn quivered a little, giving off an extremely soft sound. ‘Weng! Weng!’ sounds directly entered my brain.

The Sky God’s horn gave off a hazy white light that suspended in front of Xiu Si. Xiu Si had already closed his eyes long ago as he focused all of

his concentration in controlling the power. The white light ray, which had been emitted by the horn, slowly encompassed my entire body. I didn't feel any discomfort. A sound that seemed to have broken, yet continued to linger at my ears. The sound was sometimes sharp, sometimes gentle, sometimes stable, and sometimes excited. My mood followed the shift in the melody.

Xiu Si said heavily, "Stop listening to your surrounding and focus wholeheartedly in gathering your mind and stabilizing it."

His words made me apprehensive, so I closed my eyes and willingly let the sounds enter my ears. My heart gradually calmed down and I entered my meditative state.

Xiu Si chanted heavily, "The God King bestowed upon me the Sky God's horn. My horn's roar will pierce through the nine heavens."

As Xiu Si chanted, I felt a warm energy that slowly entered through the pores in my body. After a while my body felt numerous feelings, be it sore, itchy, numb or pain. It was really uncomfortable. It was even worse than when the dark elements corroded my body, making it impossible for me to continue my calm meditative state. Large droplets of perspiration flowed down from my forehead. My mouth slowly started to give off weak groaning sounds. However, I gritted my teeth and bore the indescribable pain in order to recover my looks so that I could get back with Mu Zi. The hot energy in the surrounding that infiltrated my body became intense. My body seemed to be fixed on the spot, unable to make any movements. I had complete faith in Big Brother Xiu Si, so I allowed the hot energy to flow through my entire body, keeping my three powers deep within my body. Under the powerful impact, my consciousness became hazy before it left me. My mind was plunged into endless darkness.

"Zi! Zi! Zha! Zi! Zi! Zha!" A clear birdsong woke me from my slumber. The light ray in the room was already very bright. The sunlight had penetrated the tall window to shine on my body. I felt indescribably sluggish. My entire body felt relaxed and was extremely comfortable. When I checked my interior, the three powers were automatically revolving. I struggled to sit up on the bed. "Ah!" I suddenly exclaimed as I

had discovered that the majority of my scars had disappeared, while the remaining scars' repulsive projections had smoothed, leaving faint scars. My hands trembled as I touched my face. As expected, it was the same! The scars had disappeared.

Was I dreaming? I pinched my legs with all my strength. Ai Yo! It hurt. It seemed to be a reality. My spirit improved as my blood circulated. I suddenly discovered Big Brother Xiu Si, who had a paled face, lying near me.

I immediately felt his pulse. It was extremely weak. I circulated my Ascending Dragon Battle Spirit to carefully inspect his body. It seemed that it was due to overusing his powers that had led him to faint. I couldn't help, but inwardly felt gratified as Xiu Si had used all his power to treat me.

I feared that he wouldn't be able to endure it so I slowly inserted battle spirit into his body. As the Ascending Dragon constantly entered his body, Big Brother Xiu Si's complexion gradually became rosy.

Xiu Si let out a breath and slowly woke up from his slumber.

I gently called out, "Big Brother Xiu Si, Big Brother Xiu Si, wake up."

Xiu Si gave out a groan before he groggily opened his eyes. When I saw that he woke up, I said, elated, "That's great, Big Brother Xiu Si, you've awoken."

When Xiu Si looked at me, he seemed to be stirred up. He grabbed on my hand and struggled to sit up. He said painfully, with tears flowing out from his eyes, "Ah! Zhang Gong, I've let you down."

## Chapter 10: Dark Fusion

I looked at my body and said, “Big brother Xiu Si, I think it’s already much better as it has a heaven to earth difference.”

Xiu Si sighed heavily. “I had activated the Sky God’s horn to help clear the remaining poison on your skin. Even though the corrosion of the dark elements was severe, under the divine power of the horn, it had cleared parts of the scars on your skin. Ai! My martial power is still insufficient to treat you. Take a look in the mirror.” Upon saying that, he hung his head dispiritedly as he leaned to the side.

I felt that something has gone wrong from his speech. I stood up in a daze and looked at the mirror at the side. After seeing my appearance, I raised my head and shrieked miserably. ‘Why?! Why is my life so bitter?’

My appearance didn’t change much from my previous appearance. It was just that the scars no longer projected. But the deep atrocious scars were still on my originally handsome face. The mirror slipped from my hands, giving off a clear shattering sound when it landed on the ground.

“Big Brother Xiu Si, do I still have any chances of recovery?” My voice had a trace of dejection.

Xiu Si said bitterly, “Since my martial power isn’t enough to force all of the poisons in your body out at one go, the dark elements had already fused with your skin. There’s no other ways to cure your scars, unless if you were to change your body’s skin. With that said, there isn’t any probability of recovery with my powers. Brother, elder brother has let you down.”

I sat beside Xiu Si and embraced his broad shoulders before I consoled, “You’ve already done your best. It’s really much better now as compared to when I didn’t receive your treatment. Big Brother Xiu Si, I don’t blame you. I can only say that my life is bitter.”

A commotion occurred outside the room; it was obvious that my moanful yell had caused it. I had to face what I had to face. I rapidly wore my clothes before opening the room’s door. There were many people that

gathered outside the door. Big Brother Zhan Hu, Dong Ri, Gao De, Xin Ao, Jian Shan, the villagers from God's Village, Mu Zi and Ke Lun Duo had gathered as they had a look of anticipation at the entrance of the stone room.

I trudged out of the stone room. When everyone saw that my looks hadn't changed, they gasped and Mu Zi's complexion became pure white.

My previously stirred up and sorrowful mood had already calmed down. I told everyone with smiles, "Big Brother Xiu Si had already done his best. I can't go against my destiny. Thank you all for protecting me while I was receiving treatment and return to rest up. If something happens, I'll notify all of you."

Zhan Hu leaped forward and tightly clenched on my shoulder before hollering, "What do you mean by can't go against your destiny? Fuck! God King, you old fellow, why do you have to devastate my brother?....."

"Big brother, stop saying that already. I've already gotten used to my current looks. Pain and sorrow can't solve the problem. Let's settle the current matters at hand first. Big Brother Xiu Si had used all of his strength to treat me and is currently resting in the room. All of you should also rest up. I'll be here to deal with everything."

Mu Zi walked towards me, step by step. Her expression was calm and my heart shuddered with her every step. 'What was she going to tell me? Was she going to tell me that our relationship no longer had any hope?'

When Zhan Hu saw Mu Zi coming over, he automatically flashed to the side; everyone looked fixedly at both of us.

A cool breeze blew against my face, making my long hair to be blown aside, exposing my entire atrocious face. Mu Zi kept walking in front of me until she reached one third of a meter in front of me. She looked foolishly at me before she suddenly extended her hands to hold onto my face. With a candid smile, she said gently, "Zhang Gong, you don't have to undergo any more treatment. No matter how your looks changed, you're forever the Zhang Gong that cares, loves and cherishes me in my heart. No one will be able to exceed your position in my heart. I--Love--You!"

My entire body stiffened and tears uncontrollably flowed down my face, wetting both of Mu Zi's hand.

"Can we return to our previous relationship? Even if we were to start anew, can you give me a chance to pursue you?" Everyone looked at Mu Zi; those prideful experts expressed a rare phenomenon of expressing respect.

I held on Mu Zi's hand and replied with a trembling voice, "I'm no longer compatible with you, Mu Zi."

Mu Zi replied smiling, "Why is that, my God's inheritor? The heaven had predetermined our meetings and naturally bound our lives together. Are looks that important? If you're really mindful on that, I'm willing to disfigure my looks to be similar to yours. Will you be able to accept me then?"

I jumped up in fright before I yelled, "No! Mu Zi, stop pressuring me. Can you let me think this through?"

Mu Zi clearly saw that my attitude had changed. She smiled with satisfaction before replying gently, "I won't pressure you. I'll always wait until you accept me. However, a girl's youth is limited so don't make me wait for too long. I want to remain some of my youth to you, alright?"

Mu Zi's warm and gentle voice had made my heart violently surge. I almost wanted to yell out that I agree, but my inferiority prevailed my feelings. I dejectedly nodded before whispering, "Everyone should go and rest up. Even though our current position isn't dangerous, it isn't safe as well, so it's important that we maintain in a good state."

Mu Zi tiptoed and gently left a kiss on my face. The gentle touch had made my lonely heart to be filled with sweet feelings. My heart was completely ablaze.

After Mu Zi left, everyone was still standing at their positions and looked at me dazed. It was obvious that they hadn't come around. I mockingly chided them, "You haven't seen enough? Quickly go and rest up."

Gao De gave a weird call out before he took the lead to run away. Zhan Hu patted on my shoulder before he slowly dispersed with the crowd.

Ke Lun Duo was the last one to leave. He walked to in front of me before he said smiling, “The princess is a good lady. Zhang Gong, I wish you two all the best.”

I asked curiously, “But she’s your fiancee in the Demon race. Don’t you get jealous at all?”

Ke Lun Duo was stunned. “Jealous? Haha! Why should I? There’s only someone that can make me feel jealous, but she’s not the princess. I have already given my heart to her. Even though the princess is beautiful, I no longer have any extra feelings towards her.”

“I never expected Brother Ke to be such a romantic person.”

Ke Lun Duo said elatedly, “It’s the first time that I’ve heard you call me that. It’s really pleasing to the ear. Please stop blaming me, alright? Don’t worry! I definitely won’t be your love rival. When your looks became like this, the princess’s pain isn’t any lesser than yours. Please try to accept her soon so that she won’t continue to be in pain.”

## Chapter 11: Ke Lun Duo's Love

I couldn't stop the curiosity and asked, "Since you didn't like Mu Zi, why would you accept the Demon Emperor's arranged marriage?"

Ke Lun Duo looked at me as though I was an idiot. "Aren't you normally quick-witted? Whenever something involves Mu Zi, you become very simple minded. I can't go against the king's order. I agreed for power. Moreover, my father had placed a lot of pressure on me. Do you know who I love? It's one of the servant girls from my manor. You're the first person that I have disclosed this secret to. Don't you ever tell anyone else. Actually, I really hope that you and Mu Zi can get together so that I'll have a legitimate reason to withdraw from the marriage."

His words aroused my interest. I questioned closely, "Can you tell me your experiences?"

Ke Lun Duo seemed to recover his attitude when he impersonated the second prince as he teasingly replied, "You're such a gossip; even the princess hasn't asked me this before. Alright, I'll tell you since you want to know, but you must swear to keep it a secret."

I had completely recovered from the pain discovering that I couldn't recover my looks. I patted my chest as I promised him, "Don't worry. Every word from me carries weight."

Ke Lun Duo surveyed his surroundings before an intense longingness appeared in his eyes. His tone became softer. "Ah Shui is an extremely good girl. It was unknown why she wandered the streets when she was still a child. I'm 29 years old this year. I was 15 years old when I met with the 5 year old in the streets. She looked extremely filthy at that time as she begged at the road side. The elder children that were begging bullied her as well. They beat her to the point that blood flowed from her mouth and nose. I decided to get involved due to righteous indignation. Currently, I'm really happy that I decided to help her out. Otherwise, I would have lost my greatest happiness."

I teased, "Look at you now, you're like a child experiencing his first

love."

Ke Lun Duo pretended to be angry as he rebuked, "It is my first love. Got a problem with that? Do you still want to hear my story? If you interrupt me again, I won't continue my story."

I hastily said, "Alright! Alright! Just say your story. I won't interrupt again."

Ke Lun Duo replied with satisfaction. "That's more like it. At that time, I beat all of the children that bullied her before tossing some money at her and preparing to head home. I didn't expect that she would persistently refuse to part from me. She just wouldn't leave me no matter what I did. I tried being fierce towards her, scolding her and scaring her. But she just wanted to follow me no matter what. I originally planned to toss her at the entrance of my house, but I didn't have the heart to do it, so I decided to bring her into the manor. After my father discovered this, he didn't chide me, but rather praised my kindhearted heart and arranged for the servant in the manor to take care of her. When I asked her if she has any other kin, she just kept on crying, giving me an impression of a crybaby. When I was about to leave her, she told me that I was a really good person and asked if she could marry me after she grows up."

I exclaimed, "Can this be counted as you having abducted a young lady that hadn't mature yet?"

Ke Lun knocked on my head before continuing, "What do you mean abducted? It was meant to be a joke when I said that I'll wait for her to grow up before deciding. I had busied myself with my own matters from then on. Everyday, I trained, studied and lead the troops. It was four years after I met up with her again in the manor. Even though she was only 15 at that time, she looked exceptionally beautiful. She had gained my mother's appreciation with her pretty looks, her cleverness and abilities, making her serve by her side. When I saw her, she was wearing a white cloth with her lengthy black hair scattered on her back. The shock she gave me was deeply engraved in my memory. I initially wondered whose family's young lady had come to visit the manor so I asked my mother about it. She told me that she was the filthy little girl that I had rescued.

She suddenly came to find me one day and said, 'Brother, I've already grown up. Can I marry you? I know my status is low, but I just want to serve you by your side, no matter if it's to be your slave or wife, I'm willing.' Zhang Gong, think about it, when a beauty says this to you, how will you feel?"

His words made me reminisce Hai Shui. "It's hard to say. If she's the first one that entered your heart, you must be worried."

Ke Lun Dup nodded. "That's right, even though I didn't really reply to her at the time, her position in my heart was already very heavy. Thus, I went to my mother and asked her to serve me. My mother wordlessly agreed. Those were my happiest moments from then on. She was smart and gentle, giving off a manner of an unmarried daughter of a noble house. I taught her how to write and strum a lute. She quickly adapted and gradually, I found that I was already unable to part from her. Finally, on a rainy night, I drank too much wine and couldn't control myself, so....." When he said that part, Ke Lun Duo's face flushed.

As a man, I naturally understood what he had done before angrily rebuking him, "You, lecher, to take advantage of her difficulties."

Ke Lun Duo glared at me and said, "What do you mean I took advantage of her difficulties? We're truly in love. After that, I swore that I'll only love her in my life. However, Ah Shui didn't express too much excitement and just said that she's satisfied with just staying by my side. It was at that moment that the Demon Emperor announced my and Mu Zi's marriage. I still remember this vividly: once Ah Shui got the news, her face paled for a month, making her fall severely ill. I had used everyday after that swearing and promising her, with the addition of my Eighteen Softening skills, I successfully brought her back to my side."

I asked, stunned, "What are the Eighteen Softening skills?"

Ke Lun Duo smiled mysteriously. "You don't know? There's also things that you, the God's inheritor, didn't know? When chance presents itself, big brother will teach you. I promise that you will be able to coax Mu Zi to be docile."

I understood what he meant after his explanation before I snappily said, "You! Are you and Ah Shui gonna go on like this forever? Your parents also don't know about your matters. When are you going to give her a status? If you don't cherish such a good girl, you'll regret it for life."

Ke Lun Duo replied, "I don't need you to teach me that. When I came here with Mu Zi, protecting her is my highest priority, but secondly, it's also to facilitate in getting you two back together. The best will be for you to elope with her. Hehe! I'll then be able to justly and honorably withdraw from the marriage to marry my beloved Ah Shui. Haha!"

## Chapter 12: The Hero Saves the Beauty

I said smiling, "So you have a conspiracy. I'll give my blessings to the both of you. If it really can't work out, you can elope with Ah Shui as well. I'll definitely take good care of you two at the human's continent. How's that?"

Ke Lun Duo's eyes lit up. "There's really an enormous obstruction for Ah Shui to be with me. Your suggestion isn't bad. When I bring Ah Shui to live with you all, it really won't be bad as the life in your human's continent is more comfortable than in the Demon race. Ha!.....I'm really sleepy, so I'm going to sleep. I feel much more relaxed after telling you this, so I definitely will have a good rest tonight." After hearing his story, I felt that much closer to Ke Lun Duo since we were both unfortunate people and had some problems with our family.

'Even though I didn't recover my looks, I felt much better already. Since nothing should happen here, I shall head out and wander the proximity of the manor.' Thinking about that, I waved my hand to open the space pocket and took out a long muslin conical bamboo hat. It was the item that I bought when I was in the Demon's city. After taking a cloth to wrap the Sukrad's staff and made clear of my departure to one of the guards, I headed out of the Prince's manor.

The sky was as pretty as a blue velvet. Everywhere was filled with clouds and the bright and beautiful sunshine shone on me, making me indescribably comfortable. There was also a constant flow of patrolling soldiers on the streets of the fortress.

I gradually strolled the street, browsing the items of the fort before I suddenly heard a dispute in front of me.

"I already told you not to follow me. Why are you still following me?"

"Miss, please stop running around all over the place. If something were to happen to you, how are we supposed to head back and account for you?"

"Enough! Don't you feel bothersome? I'm not a child. There shouldn't be

any problems if I go for a walk. This is our territory, so what dangers will I experience? I warn you all that you're forbidden to continue following me."

A young and beautiful lady appeared in my sight. She was wearing a beautiful red mage robe, with her lips pouting, expressing dissatisfaction. The four warriors that closely followed her looked extremely keyed up/nervous.

The leader of the warriors suddenly blocked the lady's path before saying respectfully, "Miss, please head back with us. Otherwise, Master will be angry."

The young lady used her strength to push against the sheath of the long sword that was blocking her way and fumingly replied, "I'm not going back! Nope! I'm not heading back." When the long sword didn't move an inch, the young lady was so angry that her charming face flushed red. "Good, you're the one that forced my hand. Oh great fire god, bestow me your powers to use your explosive fire and eliminate everything that is before you--Explosive flames!" My goodness, that brat was really a small chilli.

Fire elements frantically gathered around the girl. During that period when that warrior was stunned, a couple of enormous fireballs exploded in front of him.

That warrior didn't panic when in shock. He enclosed his body with a white battle spirit that had traces of gold in it. It seemed that he had real skills as he was already approaching the Radiant Knight rank. When the fire got in contact with the battle spirit, it gave off concentrated explosion sounds. Since the warrior didn't make sufficient preparation, he was momentarily forced two steps back from the shockwave. The young lady let out bell-like laughter as she took advantage of the time he was frenetic to move like a breeze past the warrior's obstruction.

Simultaneously, when they were fighting, hurried horse's hoof sounds resounded. A team of heavy armoured cavalries was rushing over. Seeing their hurried appearance, it was obvious that they were going to carry out

an important mission. When that girl dodged the obstruction, she was right in front of them. She was moving backwards so she didn't notice the sudden incoming danger. The warriors that obstructed her shouted loudly in chorus, "Miss, be careful! It's dangerous!"

The young girl then discovered the heavy armoured cavalries that were already near her. She had unexpectedly forgotten to use her wind magic to avoid them due to fright. The heavy armoured cavalries also discovered her so they pulled on their reign. However, since the horse and the cavalries were heavily armoured, their inertia were large so for a moment, they weren't able to stop their charging force. When the life fire of the young girl was going to be extinguished from being trampled over, I made my move.

At this moment, short teleportation displayed great powers. I suddenly appeared to the young girl's side, embracing with an arm. I used the time, since the armoured horses hadn't reached us, to teleport to the side of the street. The crowd only saw that the young girl had disappeared after a black shadow flashed past. Those heavy armoured cavalry had charged 10 meters before stopping.

After the four guards that follows the girl saw that a black covered face man had saved their young master, they immediately charged over. The leader shouted at the heavy armoured cavalry, "Are you dog eyes' blind?! Why are you running so fast in the main street?!"

The leader of the heavy armoured cavalries shouted, "Who are you to scold us? This is a fort to prevent our enemies from invading us, not a playground. Who called you to let your child wander about?"

That warrior's expression agitatedly changed before they angrily gushed out to the front of the leader of the heavy armoured cavalries, taking out a writ tablet and waved it before him. The leader of the heavy armoured cavalries looked as though he had saw a ghost. He leaped down from their horses and said politely, "Sorry, I didn't know....."

The warrior complacently stopped him from talking as he said arrogantly, "Miss was unharmed this time. If not, it won't suffice to

appease the Master's anger, even after chopping your dozen heads' off."

The leader of the calvary respectfully replied, "Yes! Yes! Yes! We'll definitely take note of that next time. We really have an urgent military affair so we....."

The warrior impatiently waved his hand. "Enough, just quickly head on. Be careful from now on." It seemed that the warrior understood the logic, where it was possible to let people off, one should spare them. I didn't know which division they served under to have actually made those insufferably arrogant heavy armoured cavalries give in so obediently.

After those heavy armoured cavalry left, a crisp voice sounded from my side, "Hey! Hey! Can you let me go already? Are you thinking of taking advantage of me?"

I lowered my head and remembered that the beautiful young girl was still in my embrace. I hastily let go of her and retreated two steps back before replying apologetically, "My apologies to miss, I had treated you irreverently."

The girl said with a gentle laughter, "Thank you for saving me."

I gently shook my head. "Anyone who met with this kind of situation will make a move to help if they have the capability. Miss, you should be careful from now on and stop being so willful. Otherwise, it really isn't worth it for you to lose your life meaninglessly."

The young girl frowned and looked as though she was going to throw her temper, but she seemed to remember that I was her benefactor that had saved her life, so she forcefully suppressed her anger and replied, "I understand."

# Chapter 13: The Prince Returns Home

The four warriors surrounded me before simultaneously bowing. The leader of the warriors said, "Thank you for saving our Miss. Please accept this bow from us brothers."

I gently waved Sukrad's staff, that was covered with some cloth, as I replied smiling, "Friends, no need to be so courteous." A faint light was emitted from the cloth that forcefully lifted them from their bowed position. The leader asked in awe, "May I ask which division in the Kingdom of Aixia you're in? With your magic, you should be a Magister."

Without waiting for a reply, the girl said, "I'm Ling Ling Xin. Who are you and can you let me see your face?"

I shook my head. "That won't be necessary. We met by accident so why should we know each other's identity? Let us meet again in the future."

Ling Ling Xin suddenly appeared before me, extending her hand to remove my conical hat. The few warriors shouted in unison, "Don't do that Miss!" But how could the willful Miss listen? She stubbornly charged towards me. It seemed that she didn't learn from her mistake and didn't know the immensity of heaven and earth. An invisible, transparent boundary appeared in front of me. 'Peng!' Ling Ling Xin collided with the boundary and fell to the ground.

I laughed and said, "Is that any way to treat your benefactor? I'll show you my appearance since you want to see it." As I said, I expanded the boundary, leaving out the four warriors, who thought I was going to hurt their miss.

Ling Ling Xin's previous fall wasn't light, it took her a lot of effort to sit up and rub her the injured areas.

I moved in front of her and asked, "Didn't you want to see my appearance? Look carefully then." Upon saying that, I lifted one side of the muslin in her direction. A mournful screech sounded from her mouth that coupled with my laughter, gave the situation a sinister atmosphere.

"Everyone, your Miss has just experienced a slight shock so take care of

her. I'll be leaving." How could I not punish this crafty and unruly girl a little?

With a flash of light, I disappeared from everyone's sight.

Ling Xin Xin said to herself, "He...He was really ugly."

The leader of the warriors sighed. "The person that saved you is an extremely powerful mage. We aren't his match even if we were to team up against him. Miss, let's head back quickly."

Lin Xin Xin nodded, with unfocused eyes, before following the warriors.

My heart felt a little uneasy as I hid in a corner. Had I overdone it in scaring the girl into such a state?

I no longer felt like strolling after this matter, so I turned around and headed back to the manor.

.....

"Zhang Gong, where did you go? I was looking for you." Once I stepped inside the Prince's manor, Big Brother Shan Yun came to see me.

"You were looking for me? What for?"

"For business of course. Father has already declared that my eldest brother and I will be in charge of the Allied Cavalry. He has already returned to His Majesty to discuss what we talked about that day."

I took down the conical hat and replied smiling, "Uncle really is a impetuous person. I feel real bad in making that old man work."

Shan Yun sighed. "Actually, even though my father didn't mention it, I know that that old man wants to reconcile. The real warmongers are few in number. Who doesn't want to live in peace? I've heard that your wounds aren't fully recovered. I'll help you find some doctors to see if they can cure your wounds."

"Thank you Big Brother Shan Yun. However, it's unnecessary as Big Brother Xiu Si's Sky God's horn couldn't cure my wound. I doubt any average doctor would be able to cure it. I appreciate your good intentions, but I really don't want to experience any more major disappointments

after becoming hopeful again.”

Shan Yun replied, “Alright then. The rest have gone to rest up. You couldn’t have eaten breakfast yet and I also haven’t, so how about us brothers find a place to eat?”

I asked, puzzled, “Don’t you need to work today? How do you have time to accompany me?”

Shan Yun said, smiling, “It’s unknown why the allied Demon and Beast race retreated 15 Km. Currently, there’s eldest brother to keep watch at the frontlines so naturally, I can relax.”

As Shan Yun and I enjoyed our meal, I asked, “Big Brother Shan Yun, if your Kingdom of Xiuda agrees to participate in the negotiation, what do you think our next step should be?”

Shan Yun glanced at me from the side before replying with a smile, “Brother, are you testing me? Seeing your behaviour, it seems that you should have a card up your sleeve.”

Embarrassed, I scratched my head. “Even though I’ve got some thoughts on this, I want to hear your opinion first.”

Shan Yun replied, “If His Majesty really agrees to negotiate, the next step we should take is to convince the other two kingdoms. It’ll be extremely easy to convince the Kingdom of Dalu. You should also know that there’s another official name for Dalu.”

I nodded and my eyes lit up as Shan Yun and I said simultaneously, “The Peace Kingdom.”

Shan Yun replied, “Since they are a peaceful country, they shouldn’t like fighting. They’ll definitely stand on our side as long as we mediate. In that case, it’ll be easier to convince Aixia, but there’s something that you must settle as soon as possible.”

I queried, “What’s the matter?”

Shan Yun’s expression changed as he said, “That is to immediately confirm the attitude of the allied Demon and Beast race forces. As the

proverb says, there are times where orders, excluding their ruler's, won't be accepted. If the allied army of the Demon and Beast race don't listen to the Princess and insist on attacking the Ström Fortress, what will you do then? Won't everything be in ruin? Thus, before my father returns with the news, you must let Mu Zi to stabilize them. It's best if we're able to confirm their views before the peace talks."

I had really neglected this matter and what Shan Yun said was logical. If the allied army of the Demon and Beast races didn't listen to their orders to move, what would I do then?

"Big Brother Shan Yun, what you've said is right. We'll head there tomorrow since it's better to settle this matter as soon as possible."

Shan Yun nodded. "After dinner, I'll bring you to the Eastern entrance, at that time I could make an excuse to do a patrol to bring you out. You must head back as quickly as you can, as I don't want what repeat of what previously happened with you killing your way back in."

After quickly finishing our meal, I dashed to Ke Lun Duo's room. That fellow was in a deep slumber as he didn't notice me, even after walking to his side. How was he an expert?

I gathered a water bullet and instantly shot his face. This was the most efficient way to wake someone up, as I had learned from experiences with my mother.

Ke Lun Duo became alert and jumped down from his bed.

"It's raining! It can't be! How could there be rain in the room? Ah! Zhang Gong, why are you here?"

I suppressed my laughter and replied, "It's to wake you up, lazy bum, to discuss some business."

## Chapter 14: Demon Race's Main Camp

Ke Lun Duo rubbed his eyes. "What matter do you need to discuss now? I didn't sleep last night. If you don't let me sleep for the next 10 hours, I'll definitely have a black eye. If I head back and Ah Shui doesn't want me, I'll blame it on you and steal Mu Zi from you. Hmph!"

I regathered another small water bullet and threatened him. "You dare? Do you want to test this little thing out? Quickly get up! I really have some important matters that I need to discuss with you."

Looking at the water bullet in my hand, Ke Lun Duo quickly sat up, with his hands covering his face, he replied, "I'm up! Can I not get up? What's the matter? Say it."

I withdrew the water bullet in satisfaction. "It's like this....." I repeated what Big brother Shan Yun told me before, and concluded it saying, "Thus, I wish to accompany you and Mu Zi to head to the Demon and Beast race's allied forces tonight, in order to stabilize them so that they won't attack the fortress again. It'll be easier for us to carry out our task here this way."

Ke Lun Duo had already somewhat woken up and after hearing what I said, he replied seriously, "What you say makes sense. Alright, let's head there tonight. However, I've a condition."

I asked stunned, "Condition? What condition?"

Ke Lun Duo chuckled and replied, "Let me sleep first. Don't come and disturb my sleep again."

I tossed a water bullet over before jokingly chided him. "You're good! You dare to play me."

Ke Lun Duo blocked the water bullet and said smiling, "Alright! Alright! You should also rest up. You shouldn't call the princess though. You don't know how worried she was for you yesterday, so let her rest up. When we are leaving tonight, we can just call for you. That's right, who are you planning to bring along?"

I pondered before replying, “The people that go should be chosen by their quality rather than quantity. Otherwise, it might arouse suspicion. I think that only the ones that received God’s inheritance should go. What do you think?”

Ke Lun Duo nodded. “That should be fine. They also shouldn’t dare to do anything to us. Don’t worry, the princess’s position in the heart of the Demon race is second to His Majesty. Moreover, there’s still me, the brilliant martial god, handsome, free and easy, lofty and powerful leader of the protector guards. Regarding the beast race, it’s actually much easier. Their intelligence is low so they usually follow us the Demon race blindly. The leader of the beast race should be the Beamon King. That fellow only knows how to fight. You should be careful that there’s our Demon race’s Prince Satan, who is in favour to fight against the humans, who has just returned to the royal city. When we came out from the Demon City, His Majesty had put the prince under house arrest. Currently, the one commanding the Demon race should be His Highness, Demon King Xiu Yu. Even though he’s in favour to fight, he’s relatively easier to talk to as compared to the prince. Moreover, Xiu Yu has been taking care of the princess since she was young. His love for the princess isn’t any lesser than that of His Majesty. Therefore, I feel that there shouldn’t be any hiccups during this trip.”

Upon hearing that, I felt much more comfortable before I replied in smiles, “Even if that’s the case, we should be careful. Alright, I’ll let you rest up. I’ll come for you when dinner time comes.”

.....

The sun gradually disappeared in the west. After the short spanned beautiful firelike clouds passed, the tranquility was restored. Since the weather was good, it seemed that the sky would be filled with stars tonight.

The eight of us mixed in Big Brother Shan Yun’s Dragon Army squad, secretly leaving Ström Fortress.

“The sight of the surveillance soldiers is impossible to reach here from

the fort. Quickly go, I'll patrol around here before coming back to wait for you. If you need assistance, remember to use the signal flair that I gave you."

I quickly donned on the night attire before gathering our group and bid Shan Yun farewell. We then rapidly headed to the main camp for the Demon and beast races' allied forces.

Ke Lun Duo said, "Zhang Gong, no matter what happens later, try not to make your move and let me settle it. We'll head to the Demon race's side first. If we can bring His Highness Xiu Yu on our side, then the Beast race will be easy to be dealt with."

.....

"Who are you people?"

"It's me, Ke Lun Duo. I've returned from the Royal City."

"Ah! Is it Lord Ke Lun Duo? Please wait for a moment."

The entrance of the stronghold opened and a squadron of men and horses came out. Even though they didn't recognise us, with Ke Lun Duo's title as being the Demon race's top warrior, he was naturally revered by the low status soldiers. After clearly seeing Ke Lun Duo's appearance, the leader of the soldiers respectfully said, "It really is you, Lord Ke Lun Duo. Why did you come from the direction of the Ström Fortress?"

Ke Lun Duo's expression dampened before he shouted, "I'm on a classified mission! Is that something that you can ask about?"

That soldier's expression changed, but rapidly recovered as he replied apologetically, "I spoke too much. I'm only doing my task, so I must be cautious. Please don't mind."

Ke Lun Duo's expression softened. "Alright, but quickly bring me into the fort. I've got some important matters that I need to report to His Highness Xiu Yu."

"Alright, please follow me. Lord, who are these people?"

"They were ordered by His Majesty to help assist me in commanding."

Mu Zi picked the right timing to brandish her hand, making a thick black fog to cover her entire body. The gloomy and cold aura had momentarily stopped that soldier from talking. He said alarmed, “Ah! So it’s the Lord dark mage. My apologies, I won’t be asking anything further. Everyone, please quickly enter.”

After passing through the towering gates, we entered the Demon’s stronghold. My goodness! The interior of the stronghold was completely lit up. The soldiers patrolling were all orderly. The tents were arranged in circles like a horn, in case there was an invasion, they could mutually assist each other. At first glance, it seemed like a battle -hardened formation with vast experience.

Ke Lun Duo whispered, “How’s our Demon race’s army look? Satisfied?”

I slightly nodded. “They are elites, and the arrangement of the stronghold is not bad.”

Ke Lun Duo replied complacently, “Of course, I put in lots of effort in arranging this stronghold. There’s hidden magic arrays in here. If the human race were to try and infiltrate, it’ll definitely be an entry, but no escape.”

I asked in awe, “You arranged this stronghold?”

Ke Lun Duo puffed out his chest. “Of course, why? You don’t believe me? If I can’t do at least this much, how will I ever achieve the His Majesty’s recognition and also hold the Demon race’s top warrior title?”

Mu Zi voiced out. “Enough, stop bickering. We’re near the main camp.”

As expected, there was an enormous tent that wasn’t far. There were a couple of small tents, they looked like stars supporting the moon, surrounding it in the middle. There were also six watchtowers that surrounded the big tent. It was exactly as Ke Lun Duo mentioned, there was a constant flow of people on duty around the clock.

I discovered that the guards of the Demon race were in red instead of the black military uniform I had seen previously as we neared the main camp.

Ke Lun Duo whispered, "They're our red uniformed warriors. They are much higher ranked than the ordinary warriors."

As expected, the guard that guided us were stopped by the red uniformed soldiers.

## Chapter 15: Prince Xiu Yu

“What are you doing here? Is this a place that you’re authorized entry?”

“Sorry, my Lord. It’s just that Lord Ke Lun Duo has returned, so I’ve specifically come to report.”

Ke Lun Duo walked out from the crowd and said with his head raised, “Go and report to His Highness Xiu Yu of my return. I have matters to discuss with him.”

When the red uniformed warrior saw Ke Lun Duo, his previous unbridled attitude was suppressed. After he respectfully agreed, he turned back to head inside the camp.

Ke Lun Duo looked at the soldier in charge of the entrance to the stronghold, “You’re diligent in your work. You can head back first. If there’s a chance, I’ll find you a better position.”

That soldier thanked him profusely. With Ke Lun Duo in the lead, we continued to walk inside unhindered. The previous red uniformed warrior ran over and said, “Reporting to lord, His Highness Xiu Yu has already woken. You can meet up with him at the main camp.”

‘En!’ Ke Lun Duo agreed.

Mu Zi whispered, “Be careful and act according to situation.” Mu Zi was unexpectedly more cautious than I was, even though we weren’t in any danger and were in her territory. It was no wonder why the Demon Emperor wanted her to be his successor as she really had a general’s manner.

There were 12 red uniformed guardian at the entrance of the main camp. When they saw Ke Lun Duo, they bowed towards him. “Lord Ke Lun Duo has arrived.” Those 12 guardians didn’t look simple; they were absolutely top warriors.

When we wanted to follow Ke Lun Duo in, we were blocked by the red uniformed guardians. Ke Lun Duo frowned and said, “What are you doing? They were dispatched by His Majesty to assist me. Let them in.”

The red uniformed guardian unemotionally replied, "His Highness Xiu Yu only wanted to meet you."

Ke Lun Duo and Mu Zi looked at each other before Ke Lun Duo said, "I should be able to bring two people with me, right? They were the ones that His Majesty told me to bring them to meet His Highness Xiu Yu." While he said that, he pointed towards Mu Zi and I. That guardian replied, "Please remove your weapons. Under His Highness order, no one is allowed to bring weapons into the camp."

Ke Lun Duo said helplessly, "His Highness Xiu Yu is always so careful." After saying that, he took the lead to remove his companion sword. I passed the Sukrad's staff to Zhan Hu while Mu Zi didn't bring any weapons. The red uniformed guardian moved aside. After I affirmed Zhan Hu and Xiu Si with an eye signal, I entered the tent with Mu Zi and Ke Lun Duo.

"Nephew, you're back." A gentle voice sounded. I raised my head and saw that there was a person sitting behind an enormous table within the tent. That person looked stern and was slim, with his small eyes he looked lively. He was wearing the most ordinary mage's robe, but it couldn't mask the aura of royalty. Even though he couldn't compare with the Demon Emperor's matchless domineering aura, his aura wasn't ordinary. That person must be Demon King Xiu Yu.

When Ke Lun Duo hadn't replied to him, Mu Zi suddenly took off her cloak and rubbed against her face to reveal her true form. She flew over and said lovably, "Uncle Xiu Yu, Mu Zi has come to see you."

Xiu Yu was shocked at first, but after seeing Mu Zi's exceptional appearance, his wary filled face changed to a look of limitless spoiling. He extended his arms and walked over from the table before benevolently saying, "So it's my little Mu Zi. Quickly come here and let uncle look at you. It has already been a few years since uncle last met you. I missed you to death."

Mu Zi was in his embrace from Xiu Yu's opened arms. Currently, I couldn't see his Demon King's identity. He currently was just an elder that

dotes on his younger generation. I didn't know why, but my heart surged forth with a sour feeling.

Xiu Yu released Mu Zi and said in smiles, "When the guardians told me that Wa Leng had brought over some black covered masked people over, I thought that something was going to happen so it was my little Mu Zi that had come over. You made uncle worried for nothing."

Ke Lun Duo said with a wryly smile, "Your Highness, don't trust your nephew?"

Xiu Yu replied indifferently, "Don't say it like that. I must be on guard against others. With my high status, and considering that this is now the frontline, it's always better to be cautious."

I couldn't help, but to ask, "Then, do you trust Mu Zi?"

Xiu Yu frowned as he stared at me before shifting his gaze to Mu Zi. His expression instantly changed back to incomparably benevolent look. "How can Mu Zi be the same? Even if I don't trust the Demon Emperor, I absolutely trust in Mu Zi. I've looked after her since she was young. I don't have any children, so Mu Zi is like my daughter. Moreover, even if she were to harm me, I'd simply accept it."

I was stunned as Xiu Yu pampered Mu Zi in such a way.

Mu Zi replied lovingly, "Uncle Xiu Yu treats me the best." From her words it certainly showed that I had spoken poorly, I couldn't revoke my comment so I could only eat my words and suffer unwillingly.

Xiu Yu ordered, "Servers, you're to prepare the best refreshments. I'm going to take care of these important guests."

Mu Zi said, "Uncle, I've got a few friends outside. Can you let them in?"

A cold glint flashed past Xiu Yu's eyes. "Alright, let them in."

After a while, the tent was filled with various refreshments and food. Xiu Yu raised a wine glass at Mu Zi before saying, "To my good niece that came from afar, uncle welcomes you." Upon saying that, he guzzled down the wine. Mu Zi drank with him. Xiu Yu glanced at all of us before asking

Mu Zi, "My niece, you've come here not just to meet uncle, right? If there's matters, just say them."

Mu Zi extended her hand and drew a line to summon a space pocket before she respectfully took out a scroll that was completely golden. Once Xiu Yu looked at the scroll, his expression obviously changed.

Mu Zi stood up and said, "Demon King Xiu Yu, receive your order."

Xiu Yu hastily left the wine classifier and knelt. "Your subordinate is here."

"Accept the Mandate of the Heavens, the Demon Emperor orders. Since there's a strong enemy that is going to invade the world from a strange dimension, I specifically order the third Princess Mu Zi to be in charge in negotiating with the humans to fight against the outsider. Demon King Xiu Yu is to assist her with all your might and notify the beast men to work together alongside. When the princess is at your side, she should be treated as though I am personally there." So, this was the Demon Emperor's imperial edict. It seemed that Mu Zi had a lot of effective devices."

Demon King Xiu Yu didn't dare to slight the order as he shouted, "Xiu Yu accepts the order. Long live, my Emperor."

Xiu Yu, who had received the order, looked curiously at Mu Zi and asked, "My good niece, can you explain what is going on?"

Mu Zi smiled before she told him about the Monster race's invasion. She also mentioned about the small team of us that infiltrated the Demon race and how we managed to convince the Demon Emperor.

Icy rays constantly flashed past Xiu Yu's eyes after Mu Zi told him all the details. "This is to say that His Majesty really wants to negotiate with the humans. But won't this also mean that we had wasted our many years of preparations?"

## Chapter 16: Satan's Monster Transformation

I pulled down the muslin that was covering my face as I asked. "Is human invasion that important? I know that your Demon race's life is bitter, but the eastern continent also doesn't have things that are in the west continent. Since both sides has necessities, why can't we trade? Why must we go to war? The waste of manpower and resources will shake the country's foundation. Moreover there's an outsider of our world is beginning to stir, the Monster Race. If something goes wrong, not only will the current territory not be able to maintain itself, but it may even lead to the extinction of your race."

Xiu Yu lept up and replied fuming, "Stop saying such terrifying words to scare people. His Majesty might have been confused by your rumours, but what Monster race are you talking about? It's merely a legend that from a couple thousand years ago. It's credibility is still unknown. You want me to just hand over military leadership to you with just your words? Good niece, even though His Majesty has passed down his orders, you know that uncle is in favor to make war against the humans. I really can't accept it, I refuse to retreat from just words."

It seemed that Shan Yun mentioned that they might refuse to listen to orders, excluding their Emperor, he wasn't wrong. Ke Lin Duo said, "Your Highness, are you going against the imperial edict then?"

Xiu Yu glared at him before sighing heavily. Countless thoughts flashed through his mind. He really didn't have the guts to go against the imperial edict and his beloved Mu Zi was in the middle of this.

Xiu Yu sighed before saying, "Can you let me consider for a while? We

really can't mobilize the troops now."

Mu Zi suddenly became unyielding. "Uncle, you must give me a definite answer today, I don't want the current progress of the negotiation with the three kingdoms to wither due to having a fire in my backyard. Uncle, would I harm you? Please believe in us."

Xiu Yu replied with difficulty, "Good Mu Zi, let uncle consider." If we were to make Xiu Yu pass the military leadership over a short while, it would look really bad on him. He and Xiu Da had always been working hard in preparation to invade the Human race for many years already. When he had finally gotten the chance to command the main army and was able to press on Ström Fortress, how could he just give it up so willingly?

"Reporting!" A dispatch voiced out from outside the tent.

"Speak!"

The dispatch said, partitioned from the tent, "Reporting to His Highness, Prince Satan has returned, accompanied with his guards, and says that he wants to meet you immediately."

We were all shocked by this news. Mu Zi pulled on Xiu Yu's hand and said, "Uncle, Uncle Satan has been placed under house arrest by father since he didn't agree to father's decision. How can he suddenly be here? There must be a lie here."

Xiu Yu pondered before replying, "Let me meet him before we discuss

further. The Demon Emperor might have changed his mind and no longer wants to negotiate with the Human race.”

Xiu Yu’s words made me apprehensive. Right! Did Satan’s return here really mean that the Demon Emperor had changed his mind?

Mu Zi was the first to calm down. “Alright, uncle, meet up with Uncle Satan here. We’ll hide first. If there’s any weird happenings, we’ll be in time to assist you.”

Xiu Yu nodded. “Servers, quickly clean up the place.” After that, he pointed at both sides of the cabinets before saying, “You all hide behind the cabinet. Without my command, you’re not to come out.”

Everyone hid after Mu Zi nodded.

Just when the interior of the tent was cleared, the red uniformed guardian announced from outside, “His Highness, Prince Satan has arrived.”

Xiu Yu smoothed his clothes before walking forward to greet him. When the entrance’s hanging screen opened, Demon King Satan’s lofty silhouette entered our sight with about a dozen followers behind him. What made me feel like laughing was that they unexpectedly were also masked. I kept feeling that there was something different about Satan, but didn’t know how to describe it for the moment.

Xiu Yu said, “Elder brother, you’ve returned.”

Satan snorted and replied, “The return to the Royal City has infuriated me. It seems that the Demon Emperor has gone senile to actually want to negotiate with the humans.”

Xiu Yu silently poured a cup of water and passed it to Satan. “Elder brother, quickly tell me what’s the matter?”

Satan drank the water content in one go before tossing the glass on the ground. “Brother, do you believe in me?”

Xiu Yu was stunned before replying, “Of course I believe.”

Satan replied with hatred, “Alright, since that’s the case, let us brothers make some big changes. Currently, we hold great powers, if the Demon Emperor dispatched people to negotiate with the humans, then we shall.....” Upon saying that, he brought himself to Xiu Yu’s ears and whispered some words with laughter.

After hearing Satan’s words, Xiu Yu seemed to be in great shock as he shouted, “Brother, we can’t do that as we’re one of the Demon race. How can we betray His Majesty? Moreover, if we were to betray him, aren’t you scared that he will come and find us to seek revenge? Are you confident that you can block his Dark Demon Dragon or Dark Dragon spear?” He had purposely said out loud for us to listen. This old fellow was really scheming.

Satan smiled sinisterly. “Brother, lower your voice. You want everyone to hear our conversation? If I didn’t have a way to deal with him, how could I just come suggest this to you? Brother, listen and pass the military leadership to me. If you agree, we’ll first eliminate the humans and then

the beast men. At that time, the world will be ours. We'll have half of the world each. What do you think about that?" When he was saying that, Satan's face emitted a sinister aura. Under the dusk coloured cloak, he wasn't angry at all.

After seeing this, Xiu Yu was so shocked that he retreated a few steps back. "Brother, what's wrong with you?"

I thought about something and mentally conveyed to everyone, "Be careful. Satan has already become a Monster. Everyone, please listen to my command. We'll attack together momentarily. We mustn't give them a chance to rest. If not, it'll lead to a huge loss."

I felt that Mu Zi and Ke Lun Duo, who hadn't meet with the Monster race before, instantly tensed up, while Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest gathered their Divine powers. The best way to deal with the Monster race was with Divine power. Since Satan had changed into a monster, the masked people behind him must have also been changed into monsters. The Monster King would definitely have sent out elites in order to carry out the important mission of retrieving the Demon race's military leadership. Thus, we must rapidly eliminate our opponents like silent thunderbolts. If not, it would be hard to know who would survive as it would be hard to deal with just Satan himself, who had changed into a Monster.

Satan's expression became increasingly sinister. He extended his right hand and said, "Brother, quickly pass the military leadership to me." A grey aura emitted from his entire body and was gradually headed towards Xiu Yu.

## Chapter 17: Monster King's Ressurection

Xiu Yu was fearful of him as Satan's demon power was usually similar to his. However, he currently felt that he was a small boat in a vast body of water, while Satan was on a wild, untamed ocean. With his voice trembling, he asked, "Brother, what's wrong with you? It can't be that you're possessed, right?"

Satan was shocked and realised that he had been a little too impetuous. He then withdrew the majority of the aura that was being emitted from his body before replying gently, "Brother, what are you saying? Where's the military seal? Didn't I pass it to you when I left? I think you should return it back to me. Even if we don't betray the Demon Emperor, I should be the commander here."

Xiu Yu replied, "Brother, His Majesty had already sent ambassadors here a few days ago to command me to be the commander here so I can't pass the military seal to you. You've come in so late today. You should rest up first and wait until tomorrow to discuss this, alright?"

Satan's expression changed and his sinister aura frantically surged outwards. With his eyes narrowed, he replied, "Brother, you must give me the military seal today, even if you don't want to. Quickly pass it over. Otherwise, I'll be impolite."

Xiu Yu fumed. "What? You want to make a move on me? But, I'm your brother."

Satan snorted. "Brother? So what if you're my brother? Whoever that hinders my path, I won't let him off easily. If you pass the military seal

out now, we can still be brothers. If not, I'll make my move."

Xiu Yu solemnly shook his head before he suddenly shouted, "Attack!"

Following his voice, the first to attack was Dong Ri's Wind God's bow. After a resplendent light flashed, three followers behind Satan collapsed. After a grey smoke raised, the three people instantly disappeared. Xiu Si was extremely intelligent as he knew that if he were to directly attack Satan, there would be no guarantee that he would succeed, so he left the strongest to me while he eliminated the followers.

"The God King bestowed upon me the War God's armor. No evil shall pass me for I shall obstruct the evil demons." After a blue light flashed, Zhan Hu donned the War God's armour and charged forth, just in time to deal with Satan's punch, who had just refocused. 'Hong!' A loud sound resounded. The berserk power had made the entire tent scattered and smashed.

Satan's hair was in a quite mess. He stood at the center, laughing wildly and told Xiu Yu, "You're good. You've actually teamed up with the humans to deal with me. I'll take all of your lives today."

I supported Zhan Hu, who was violently spraying out blood before conveying to Xiu Si, "Your Highness, be careful and quickly order your subordinates not to make reckless movement. You can just pass this situation to us."

The power that Satan had expressed made me exceptionally amazed and terrified. He could actually make Big Brother to get blown away and made suffer severe injuries with his powers. From this, I knew that

Satan's power wasn't inferior to the Demon Emperor's. Even if the Demon Emperor didn't possess the Dark Demon Dragon, I still might not be his match. As if to prove that my hypothesis was right, he really changed into a monster. Otherwise, normally it would be impossible for his power to increase to such an extent.

I passed Zhan Hu to Ke Lun Duo before I pulled out the Sukrad's staff from its cloth, with my eyes focused on Satan.

Satan laughed wildly. "It's you brat, again to spoil my matters. I'll definitely shatter your corpse to numerous pieces today to let you know my power."

To be honest, I wasn't sure that I'd be able to defeat him as I wasn't confident. However, I was still able to sustain for a while. I just needed to wait for Xiu Si and the rest to eliminate Satan's minions. I believe that the final victory would still fall to our side.

"The God King bestowed upon me the Radiant Holy Sword. It shall shine with the soaring radiance of the vault of the heavens."

I had interlocked my hands before my chest as I chanted. Numerous light ray emitted from my body and my hair had turned completely gold. With six light wings gently flapping on my back and a divine aura that enclosed me within, I slowly ascended into the sky. The insufferably arrogant Satan's expression focused and ascended into the sky with me.

Satan said with hatred, "I wondered who had spoilt our good matters so it was you fellow, Mi Jie Lie. During the great war between the gods and Monsters, you had used the Holy Sword to destroy my body. If it wasn't for

Master to keeping my soul's knowledge, I would have dispersed into nothing. Today, I shall take my revenge."

After hearing what he said, there was a message that suddenly passed through my mind and replied calmly, "Jia Si Ke Li Duo, you're the one that had infiltrated Demon King Satan's body. You, one of the three Great Monsters under the Monster King, had been doing the wrong things. For you to die under my hand, it's your honour. I'll kill you again today. Holy Sword!"

A small silver sword appeared in my hand, making the Divine aura surrounding me to intensify. It had resulted to an increase in vigor for Xiu Si and the rest that they continually used powerful killing techniques, forcing all of the Monsters, excluding Satan, to become unable to fend off their attacks, resulting in their deaths.

Satan showed a fearful expression at first, but he suddenly laughed, "So, you can only use one tenth of the Holy Sword's power. Haha! Even though I can't use all of my previous strength, it's still more than enough to kill you. Dark Monster Blade, come forth."

Satan's body became completely enclosed by the grey aura as a long greyish-black blade appeared in his hand. My aura, which was previously held the advantage, was suppressed greatly. I hurriedly circulated the powers in my body; magic power and battle spirit rapidly flew towards the Holy Sword to fuse with its power.

The light that was being emitted from my entire body intensified drastically before I said, "Holy Sword, go!"

A silvery-white Holy Sword shot out an elegant line towards Satan. Satan's surrounding aura was restrained as he concentrated on the Dark Monster Blade to fight head on with the Holy Sword.

When the two lights abruptly collided, it caused an explosion, loud like a thunderclap as they burst up in the sky. The sky changed colours and the surrounding clouds were dispersed by the enormous pressure. It was as though an extremely strong flare had gone off in the night sky, lighting up the Demon race's main camp as though it was daytime.

Luckily, we were high enough in the sky. Otherwise, this exchange would have injured an unknown amount of people.

The majority of the Demon-Beast allied forces, who were still in their sleeping, were suddenly awoken from their dreams due to that loud explosion. Instantly, Demon King Xiu Yu showed the mannerisms of a general as he ordered his various troops to form into a squadron formation so he would be able to deal with any changes at will. The center had been evacuated to form an empty space for Zhan Hu and the rest to fight against the Monster race.

The previous intense collision made me realise that Satan's power was beyond that of the Demon Emperor. My chest seemed like it had been struck by a large hammer, making it impossible to avoid spraying out a mouthful of blood.

Satan laughed to his heart's content. "How is it, Mi Jia Lie? This body isn't bad, right? The fusion with my power was quick. Haha! Today shall be your end. Don't think that you can defeat me by borrowing old fellow God King's Holy Sword. I'll tell you that will be impossible."

I wiped off the blood from the corner of my lips, while using the flapping of the light wings to stabilize my body before I coldly shouted, “Jia Si Ke Li Duo, don’t be complacent. With your ability, it’s not guaranteed that you’ll be able to defeat me.”

# Chapter 18: Five Gods Defeating the Monster

Satan unyieldingly said, "You're still acting tough. Alright, watch my blade." A movement sound sounded by his side, making the Dark Monster Blade to strike towards me. There was a definite gap in power between me and Jia Si Ke Li Duo. Even though I had increased drastically since the previous fight I had with the Demon Emperor, I was still not a match. Mi Jia Lie's remaining memory told me that this fellow was one of the great three right-hand men of the Monster King. When he was defeated during the previous Great War of the Gods and Monsters, his spirit was forcefully brought back by the Monster King. If Mi Jia Lie's power were to make a full recovery, he would be a force to be reckoned with.

Even though I couldn't know how much power Jia Si Ke Li Duo recovered, I could block his move with 10% of the Holy Sword's power. His recovery should just be around the same as well. Since the Monster King's body was being sealed in the God's realm by the God King, Jia Si Ke Li Duo should be unable to recover to his peak state.

As those thoughts flashed through my mind, Jia Si Ke Li Duo's Dark Monster Blade had already reached near my head. Since I wasn't his match, I wouldn't fight head on with him. However, when I prepared to avoid the attack with teleportation, I discovered that my body had been locked into place by Jia Si Ke Li Duo's aura. I noticed that in his eyes were traces of cunning and ruthlessness in his gaze.

I didn't have a choice, but to forcefully gather the remaining Holy Sword's power to shield the front of my body. 'Hong!' I was blown away 500 meters by his power. He had great strength, the power shot out by Jia Si Ke Li Duo, completely uncompromising tyrannical powers, containing a thick sinister aura within it. The sinister aura infiltrated my body on

contact, forcing me to feel devoid of any comfort.

I once again sprayed up a mouthful of blood, also the light radiating from my wings of light dimmed drastically. I managed to use the Holy Sword's Divine power to force the sinister aura from my body, but with great difficulty. I didn't know if I could withstand his next move. 'Are you still alright, Big Brother Xiu Si and the rest? Your brother is at his limit.'

At that moment, a thunderous dragon roar was heard emanating from Ström Fortress as a golden streak was moving like lightning towards my position. I instantly became elated as I knew that Xiao Jin had rushed to join the fray, knowing that I was in danger.

Jia Si Ke Li Duo noticed Xiao Jin's appearance about the same time when I did. A trace of shock flashed past his eyes as he said, "The dragon race has also come, and here I still thought that they were extinct already. Oh Great Monster King, please bestow me your sinister powers." So, he also knew how to chant. I had kept an eye on the slowly changing Jia Si Ke Li Duo. While I tried my best to adjust the powers in my body, I only saw the robe of his body expand outwards and his hair stand on end. His body became enclosed with the sinister grey aura from before. I knew that he was gathering power, in order to eliminate me before Xiao Jin could reach me in time.

Redness shone in Jia Si Ke Li Duo's eyes. Suddenly, there were eight identical clones that appeared before him. They weren't illusions, each copy controlled great powers. I immediately raised Sukrad's staff and chanted to activate the Holy Sword again, in order to preserve my life. "The God King bestowed upon me the Radiant Holy Sword. It shall shine with the soaring radiance of the vault of the heavens." Even though I didn't have much power left, with the Sukrad's staff assistant, I could just barely mobilize the silver Holy Sword out of my body.

Jia Si Ke Li Duo's grey eyes suddenly turned completely red as he hollered, "Go and die, Mi Jia Lie." All eight of his clones charged towards me as he pointed the Dark Monster blade at me. When I saw them advancing, I knew that I was finished. The clones before me weren't something I can deal with. Currently in my mind, I could only think about one thing. 'Goodbye, my Mu Zi.'

Suddenly, white, yellow, red and green powers rose from below me. At that moment those four powers suddenly entered my Holy Sword, which caused an intense Divine power that instantly stimulated a rapid recovery of my body. Three of my light wings suddenly solidified on my back, increasing the previous Holy Sword's power threefold. Golden rays flashed past my eyes as I brandished the Sukrad's staff to circulate around my body, momentarily knocking the eight clones to be blown away.

White, yellow, red and green figures that moved like lightning to gather behind me. It was Xiu Si and the rest who had finally dealt with the remaining Monster race and immediately came to assist. It was their Divine power, from which we shared the same origin, that had previously led to my drastic growth of in power, while they injected their powers into my body.

I could see the fear that showed in Jia Si Ke Li Duo's eyes as he withdrew his eight clones back to the front of his body. Xiu Si whispered, "Zhang Gong, how are you holding up?"

I smiled wryly as I replied, "If you had come any later, I'd have returned to heaven. Let's deal with this fellow first before chatting. Don't let him get away."

While Jia Si Ke Li Duo focused on us, Xiao Jin had arrived. I didn't know what he chanted, but his entire body formed into a golden arrow and struck towards Jia Si Ke Li Duo, like a shooting star. The piercing strike had instantly attracted his attention. He dodged to the side the moment just before contact. But, even though he dodged, without his scrupulous control, the eight clones of him weren't as lucky. They momentarily dispersed under Xiao Jin's tremendous attack. Xiao Jin gave off a strange cry and his entire body seemed to be in pain as he flew towards the side, while his body emitted a grey aura. I knew that he was being stricken down by the sinister aura. But with his Dragon King's physique, he should be able to withstand it. Currently, the most important objective was to quickly eliminate the harbinger of doom, Jia Si Ke Li Duo.

I shouted, "Quickly, combine our powers to eliminate him."

Xiu Si said, "The God King bestowed upon me the Sky God's horn. My horn's roar will pierce through the nine heavens." The white Sky God's horn was raised towards the sky, emitting faint white rays that blocked the north.

Xin Ao said, "The God King bestowed upon me the Titan God's hammer. I will shake the heavens and move the earth to protect the righteous path" Numerous unknown runes carved onto yellow Titan God's hammer, making the tyrannical God power to block the west.

Gao De said, "The God King bestowed upon me the Lightning God's shield. Even ten thousand blades shall not stop me." A red Lightning God's shield's red ray intensified, blocking the east.

Dong Ri said, "The God King bestowed upon me the Wind God's bow. My ethereal arrows will flash rapidly and with violence." Dong Ri flew to the south, aiming his intangible long green arrow at Jia Si Ke Li Duo.

Jia Si Ke Li Duo was locked in place by the four seals coupled with their divine instrument's aura. I floated above him and sneered, "I'm sorry but to prevent you from causing further harm, it's inevitable that we would combine our powers to eliminate you." My entire body gave off dazzling gold light that shone downwards, using the powers that I had previously absorbed from everyone.

When Jia Si Ke Li Duo's eight clones were annihilated by Xiao Jin previously, he was suffering from severe internal injuries. It was the first time that he felt that we had the power to eliminate him as the five of us relied on our divine powers to restrain him. He frantically struggled about in fright, trying to break free from his confinement.

## Chapter 19: The Monster Disappears

I calmly shouted, “Everyone, get ready! The God King bestowed upon me the Radiant Holy Sword. It shall shine with the soaring radiance of the vault of the heavens. Attack!”

The silvery-white Holy Sword charged downwards. Xiu Si and the rest had also activated their various divine techniques through their divine instruments. Jia Si Ke Li Duo gave out a mournful cry as he brandished his Dark Monster Blade to try his best in blocking out attacks. However, I knew that he wouldn’t be able to withstand for much longer since his power was weakening. He definitely didn’t have any hope of escaping under the power of the five great divine instruments. The grey aura around his body was gradually thinning and grey fluid was flowing out from his mouth.

Suddenly, a figure flew over at this moment. I shot a glance over while I was busy dealing with Jia Si Ke Li Duo; it was Demon King Xiu Yu.

Xiu Yu pleaded, “God inheritors, please have mercy. Don’t kill my brother.”

After hearing that I stunned, that was right. Currently, Jia Si Ke Li Duo possessed Demon King Satan’s body. If we were to kill him, Satan would simultaneously be eliminated. If that was the case, how could Xiu Yu cooperate with us? As I thought about it, the divine power in my hand weakened.

Jia Si Ke Li Duo took advantage of that moment to suddenly spray out a grey mist, instantly stopping our attacks. His body formed a grey smoke

and was rapidly moving away from below.

I inwardly shouted, 'Not good!' Since there wasn't Big Brother Zhan Hu to secure the bottom portion, there was a hole in our formation. Furthermore, Xiu Yu's previous comment had given Jia Si Ke Li Duo another chance to make his escape. Jia Si Ke Li Duo let out another mournful cry due to the five divine powers that heavily landed on the grey mist. The grey mist shrunk to one third of its original size, rapidly floating to the west.

"Mi Jia Jie, just you wait. After the great king returns to the world, my power will recover again. At that time, I'll come for your life....."

I looked at Demon King Xiu Yu with a heavy heart, unable to say anything at the moment.

Xiu Si flew to my side and said, overwhelmed with shock, "That fellow is really powerful. The combined power of five of us still wasn't able to eliminate him. I'm afraid that he won't be easy to be deal with in the future."

I heavily replied, "He's only one of the Three Great Monsters under the Monster King. If the Monster King returns, what will the result be?"

Xiu Yu embarrassedly replied, "I'm sorry, but I only have my older brother. I really can't bear for him to die just like that!"

This fellow didn't pay attention to the overall picture. I initially wanted to berate him, but for the negotiations with the Demon and Beast alliance

troops, I didn't have a choice, but to swallow those words. I consoled, "Forget it, there'll still be other chances. I'll try my best to rescue Demon King Satan our next encounter. Let's head back."

I already consumed all of the divine powers that everyone had previously supplied me. A sudden wave of weakness came over me, making my body to sway. Xiu Si caught me and used his horn's power to treat my damaged meridians.

I instructed Xiao Jin to head back in order to notify Big Brother Shan Yun before descending to the ground with the rest. Mu Zi and Ke Lun Duo were guarding Big Brother Zhan Hu. Mu Zi said fumingly at Xiu Yu, "Uncle, you....."

Xiu Yu guiltily lowered his head and took out the military seal before passing it to My Zu. "This is the Demon troop's military seal. I'll pass it to you now. Mu Zi, you must try to understand uncle's feelings. Satan has been possessed by the Monster race. I....."

I walked over and pressed on Mu Zi's shoulder. "Forget it, we can't blame His Highness Xiu Yu for this. Your Highness, you should now believe that the Monster race's existence is true, right?"

After this commotion, it was already impossible for Xiu Yu not to believe it so he just silently nodded.

I told Mu Zi, "Mu Zi, you should return the military seal to His Highness. We'll need to depend on His Highness to command the general situation of the troops."

Xiu Yu raised his head, stunned, as he said, “You still trust me?”

Ke Lun Duo said smiling, “His Highness is loyal to the Emperor so how could we not trust in you? There’s also no candidate more suitable than you to command my race’s great army.” Upon saying that, Ke Lun Duo gave me a respectful expression.

Xiu Yu took the military seal from Mu Zi before replying lamentingly, “The current world is you youngsters’ era. I’ve really aged. After this is over, I’ll ask His Majesty to let me retire and return home. It’s all up to you whether to fight or reconcile. Let’s return to the main camp to discuss.”

Ke Lun Duo looked at the ruins behind Xiu Yu before replying in smiles, “The main camp has already become an empty field. We should find another place instead.”

Xiu Yu then responded, with his old face’s flushed, he shouted, “Servants, clean up the mess and set up a large tent. Also, someone is to head to the Beastmen’s side to invite the Beamon King over.”

A domineering voice voiced out, “Don’t bother. Your place was so lively. Can I not join in?” An enormous black figure blocked the sky’s star light. I turned my head back and really caught a scare. The person before me, ah! I couldn’t say he was human, but should be from the Beast race. He was at least 5 meters tall, and his entire body was covered with thick armour, exposing only his arms and head. His giant arms were sparsely filled with green fur and his cyclops eye was constantly giving off fierce gazes. The first half of his head was bald, and back half had his remaining yellow hair tied back. His body’s ancient copper-like skin was emitting golden light. I dare to say that his finger was as thick as my arm. There was also

an enormous wolf tooth club in his hand at least 3 meters long. The thickest portion of it was wider than 50 cm. I couldn't guess how heavy it was, but clenched in his hand, it seemed non existent, without giving off any signs of difficulty.

Xiu Yu hastily greeted him. "Ah! Old Brother Beamon has come. Perfect, let's head to the camp to discuss."

The cyclops eye of the Beamon King blinked before he replied, "Forget it, your tent is too depressing. Let's just discuss it here. What happened? There seemed to have previously been fireworks in the sky. I thought that you were celebrating something."

Xiu Yu smiled bitterly, "What celebration would there be? It's hard to say with just a few words." Upon saying that, he shifted his gaze at me and after seeing that I had nodded, he continued, "Let's chat here then. Servants, bring a large table and some chairs over. Order the troops to return to their camp to rest up. No one is to be in the 500m perimeter of the main tent without my command."

.....

The night air tonight was exceptionally refreshing as everyone sat at the table in the battle-worn ground. The three different powers in my body had recovered a little already. The damaged meridians had been mostly repaired by Xiu Si's treatment. Big Brother Zhan Hu dispiritedly leaned on a chair. Since the Beamon King was really too gigantic, he could only sit on the floor.

Xiu Yu pointed at us and said, "Old Brother Beamon, I shall give you an

introduction. This is my Holy Radiant Empire's princess, His Majesty's first successor-in-line. This is the Beast race's top warrior, the elder of the Beamon race, Sen Si Beamon."

## Chapter 20: The Beamon's War

Traces of animosity could be seen from the Beamon King's eyes before he said politely, "So it's the Royal princess. I give you my greetings. His Royal Highness Demon Emperor is someone that I admire the most. It has been sometime since I saw that old man."

Mu Zi half raised from her chair before she replied, "You don't have to be so courteous. Father told me that the most powerful expert in this continent in regards to power is you and that he was far inferior when compared with you."

Beast men mind set were rather simple with this praises from Mu Zi, he broke into laughters. "Princess, you've overexaggerated. What's your purpose for coming to the front lines?"

Xiu Yu said, "Sigh....It's like this, do you still remember the legends from a few thousand years ago?"

Beamon King contemplated before replying, "Are you referring to the great war between the Gods and Monsters?"

Xiu Yu nodded. "That's right. The princess's motive in coming here is to negotiate with the Human race."

When the Beamon King heard that, he leapt to his feet and hollered, "Negotiation? What's there to negotiate? We definitely won't negotiate with the Human race. Our Valiant Mist Empire had spent an extremely long time to prepare for this battle. You want to have a strong start but

finish weak? I won't agree to it."

Xiu Yu frowned and said, "Old brother, please take your seat and listen to what I've to say." After seeing the Beamon King, who was filled with anger took his seat, Xiu Yu continued, "Our Holy Light Empire's preparation time for the war wasn't any lesser than yours. It was the Demon Emperor who ordered for the negotiation. The Monster race from few thousand years ago is reemerging. All of our races must work together to fight against them. If not, there maybe a risk for the races' extinction."

The Beamon King stunned before replying, "Monster race? The Monster race really exists?"

Xiu Yu replied, "I'll introduce to few more of my guest. You should recognize Ke Lun Duo so I won't be introducing him. This few others are from the human race. They are also God's inheritor. They are currently mediating in the negotiations. The previous fireworks that you thought you saw in the sky was actually due to them fighting against the Monster race. They were able to remedy the Monster's invasion, using their divine instrument's power. If it not for them, you wouldn't be able to see me now."

The Beamon King queried, "There are really Gods and Monsters? The previous power that was transmitted over was indeed extremely powerful. I could vaguely feel it even from a far distance from this place. From what you said, your Demon race will really be going to negotiate with the Human race. Big Brother Xiu Yu, you must think this through carefully."

Xiu Yu replied in smiles, "After that commotion, I've already made up my mind. Moreover, this is the Demon Emperor's decision. It can't be that

you don't trust His Majesty's wisdom?"

The Beamon King replied, "I believe in the Demon Emperor, but is the Monster race that powerful? What's there to fear about them? I'll kill every single one of them when they come. Let's eliminate the Human race before we continue to discuss this matter."

Gao De coldly snorted, "Just by yourself, you think that you can suppress the Monster race?"

The Beamon King fumed. "You dared to belittle me, who is the top warrior of the Beamon race? I want to challenge you to a battle. If you can triumph against me, I'll accept your suggestion."

Just as Gao De wanted to reply him, he was intercepted by Xin Ao as he said, "You want to compete? My Titan hammer should be a match to your wolf tooth club so I shall compete against you instead." He was worried that Gao De lightning god's shield wouldn't be able to withstand the Beamon King's offensive power. Currently, Xin Ao was really the only one most compatible to fight against the Beamon King. Xiu Si and I didn't have any intentions in stopping the fight as to convince the Beast race, which admired strength, it would be the most efficient to use force rather than facts. However, the only thing that I was worried about was whether Xin Ao was really a match for the Beamon King.

The Beamon King yelled out, "Alright, we can conveniently use this cleared space to battle. You can choose to solo fight or group fight me. You just have to defeat me, in order for me to accept your God's inheritor identity."

He was really an unreasonable fellow. If Big Brother Zhan Hu wasn't hurt, he surely had the capacity in defeating him. Xin Ao was slightly weaker than him. Thinking about that, I walked to Xin Ao's side and placed my arm on his shoulder. "Beamon King, if you can defeat Big Brother Xin Ao, you can deal with us in whatever way you want." As I said that, I was similarly inserting the powers that I had just gathered into Holy Sword's power into Xin Ao's body. Xin Ao looked at me before saying, "I'm the weakest one among the group. However, it is sufficient for me to defeat Beamon." With my Holy Sword power's assistance, Xin Ao was momentarily filled with confidence.

Xiu Yu said helplessly, "Since that's the case, alright. The rest are to leave the perimeters of the fighting ring.

Dong Ri supported me, while Xiu Si supported Zhan Hu. After everyone left the area, the Beamon King and Xiu Si were the only once at the original main camp position.

The Beamon King surged out an unprecedented imposing aura through his wolf tooth club. His battle spirit roused the dust and sand from the surrounding ground and his muscles bulged up, his joints giving off cracking sounds.

Xin Ao immediately focused his sight on him before whispering his chant, "The God King bestowed upon me the Titan God's hammer. I will shake the heavens and move the earth to protect the righteous path." A Titan God's hammer appeared before Xin Ao, carrying an intense faint yellow light with it. After Xin Ao grabbed on it, his body surged out the similar faint yellow battle spirit.

When the Beamon King saw the Titan God's hammer that Xin Ao had

summoned from space, he was startled by it. His battle spirit became slightly weaker under the divine aura enveloping him. He asked Xin Ao, “What’s that? It seems to be somewhat powerful.”

Xin Ao replied resolutely, “This is the divine instrument that the God King has bestowed upon me. This was the weapon that the Titan God held that year. I shall let you be enlightened as to see who will be the real representation of power today.”

Greed was expressed by the Beamon King’s eyes. “If you lose, give it to me. How about that?”

Xin Ao knew that the Beamon King had taken a fancy on his weapon. He snappily said, “If you win, we shall discuss it.” Upon saying that, he tossed the Titan God’s hammer up into the sky. The enormous hammer suddenly expanded to three times its original size in mid air. It wasn’t any weaker than the Beamon King’s wolf tooth club. When Xin Ao’s hand separated, he hollered, “Watch my hammer.”

The Titan God’s hammer smashed towards the Beamon King under Xin Ao’s control. The Beamon King didn’t dare underestimate him. He used both of his both hands to hold the wolf tooth club at his side and charged towards the enormous hammer as though he was flying towards it. While he swung his wolf tooth club, he yelled, “Break!” When the Titan God’s hammer collided with the wolf tooth club, it gave off an extremely loud metallic crash. Even though the Beamon King was able to counter the Titan God’s attack, he was forced to leap five steps back; in each step, it left a deep 30 cm depth feet imprint on the ground.

Xin Ao face was a little flushed, while he controlled the Titan God’s hammer. With this first contact, he came out advantageous.

Zhan Hu asked me in awe, “When did Xin Ao become so powerful? With my power, I can’t be confident enough to say that I would be unscathed when fighting head on with the Beamon king? His power is even slightly beyond that fellows?”

## Chapter 21: The Magic Beasts Retreat

I smiled and looked face to face with Xiu Si. “Big brother, you just have to wait for an amazing battle to occur. Xin Ao won’t lose. Even though Beamon is powerful, his mind isn’t.”

Even though Beamon was at a disadvantage, it had aroused his aggressiveness. After seeing two teeth from the wolf tooth club smashed from the impact, he let out a loud roar before once again charging towards Xin Ao. Xin Ao coldly snorted before wielding his Titan God’s hammer again. Successive loud ‘Hong!’ sounds rang in everyone’s ears; the two people battling were fighting head on against each other. We, the spectators, were secretly speechless while we saw their frantic power-driven, straightforward battle.

A cool breeze blew, blowing up the sand and dust in the field. Beamon King used his bent wolf tooth club to support his body and was panting profusely. A trace of blood flowed out from his lips. It could be seen that he had internal injuries. Xin Ao was in a slightly better state. With the Titan God’s hammer that was even taller than him in his hand and dishevelled clothes, he was also panting profusely while he stared unyieldingly at the Beamon King.

The Beamon King hollered, “That’s satisfying! Really satisfying! It has been sometime since I had such a fun battle.”

Xin Ao chuckled. “Do you want to go at it again?”

The Beamon King replied, “I’ve had enough. I can’t triumph against you. However, I’m not convinced in my defeat. You had relied on that hammer in your hand to defeat me. If there’s an opportunity in the future, I’ll

possess a better weapon before challenging you again.”

Xin Ao replied straightforwardly. “I agree that my weapon indeed has an advantage against you. You’re actually far stronger when compared to me without it. How about this? Let’s call it a draw.”

Seeing his opponent giving him face, Beamon King made a hastened descent from the battle stage. “Alright! I recognise you as my brother. If you need me for anything in the future, you just have to tell me.”

We were exceptionally surprised when we saw such a peaceful closure. Xiu Si whispered to me, “Who said that the Beast men have low intelligence? Just look at that fellow’s wit, he knows that he can’t defeat Xin Ao so he hastily got off the stage and even recognised Xin Ao, a god’s inheritor, as his brother. Not only will it not damage his fame for fighting prowess, it further increases his prestige among the Demon and Beast races.”

I nodded slightly. “That fellow is indeed powerful. He’s the most powerful person, excluding the Demon Emperor, in the Beast and Demon alliance. If he were to be placed in the battle field, it will be unknown on the extent of losses our Human race will receive. Judging from his power, it’s not guaranteed that the five elders would be able to deal with him.”

The Beamon King and Xin Ao walked over. The Beamon King said frankly and straightforward, “Old brother, I’ll completely listen to you on the matters here. However, I’ll have to discuss about the negotiation with my Master. I can’t make such decision by myself.”

Mu Zi said, in smiles, “Uncle Beamon, I think that it’s not necessary to

discuss this matter. When I left the Demon City, my royal father had already dispatched envoys to notify your Beast's emperor. It's just that this news hasn't reached your ears yet."

The Beamon King was stunned a moment before turning around to replied, "Alright, since that's the case, there's nothing more that I can add. We'll be great friends from now on. Let's leave the matter for now. I'll head back to my camp. That's right, brother, what's your name?"

Xin Ao smiled as he replied, "Big Brother Beamon, just call me Xin Ao from now on, that's what my friends call me."

The Beamon King replied, "En! My good brother, when you have the time, you can come and visit our Beast men's camp. I'll treat you well when that time comes. Fellow God's inheritor, Princess and Big Brother Xiu Yu, I'll take my leave."

We bid farewell to this enormous weird beast. While his back gradually faded, Xin Ao suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood. Xiu Si immediately went to support him. "How are you? Are you alright?"

Xin Ao shook his head. "That guy is too powerful. If it isn't for Zhang Gong's power that enabled me to use 60% of the Titan God's power, I wouldn't have been able to hold on."

Zhan Hu made a sudden realization. "Zhang Gong, so it was you brat that who was meddling in this. I knew that Xin Ao couldn't make such an improvement in such a short time."

Xin Ao sighed. "His power was something unprecedented to me. It's no wonder when the Her Highness Mu Zi said that the Demon Emperor is the strongest in the world. Do you know that the Titan God's hammer has an effect to triple my current power? It can be said that the Beamon King's power is three times greater compared to mine. The victory against him in this head on battle was by sheer luck."

Zhan Hu said, "It seems that Zhang Gong is the only one that has the power to triumph against the Beamon King at his peak state among us."

I smiled. "Don't say it in such a manner. There's still a possibility."

Zhan Hu was stunned. "There's another possibility? Who could that be? I definitely wouldn't be the one."

I smiled. "It's Dong Ri."

Zhan Hu exclaimed. "It can't be. Dong Ri's cultivation is at most Xin Ao's level, his power should be weaker than mine. How can he defeat the Beamon King?"

I looked at Xiu Si, who had a card up his sleeve. "Big brother Xiu Si, just tell Big Brother Zhan Hu."

Xiu Si mockingly chided. "All you know is how to push the responsibility onto me."

I smiled. "Weren't you the one that said you wanted to be my strategist? It should be you that should be in the limelight in this kind of situation."

Xiu Si told Zhan Hu, “You have been played by Zhang Gong. What he meant by Dong Ri to winning isn’t by fighting head on with the Beamon King. By using the nature elves’ agility and swift movements, in addition to the divine arrows that conquer every obstacle for the Wind God’s bow, the Beamon King will only be a target. Do you think that Dong Ri will lose in this case?”

Dong Ri said, embarrassed, “Stop exaggerating.”

Demon King Xiu Yu said, “After convincing this old Beamon, the alliance here can be completely mobilized. Princess, what kind of arrangements should I make?”

Mu Zi muttered to herself for a moment before replying, “Uncle, how about this? You lead the main allied forces to retreat 15km back and construct defensive infrastructures to express that we will be sustaining for a long-term battlefield. Other than that, we’ll settle the rest. Once the human leaders from the three kingdoms agree to negotiate, I’ll represent our side to negotiate with them.”

Xiu Yu frowned. “Princess, isn’t what you’re doing too risky? I’m worried for your safety.”

Ke Lun Duo said, in smiles, “Your Highness, you don’t need to worry about that. With the protection from the six God’s inheritors, it won’t be a problem to get out from Ström Fortress.”

Xiu Yu looked respectfully at us. Xin Ao’s previous display of power had further confirmed his thoughts on our cultivation, leading his trust in us

to increase drastically. "Alright. Fellow God's inheritors, I'll be placing Mu Zi in your hands and will have to trouble all of you to guarantee her safety."

I walked forth and said, "Your Highness, please be reassured. Our final wish is for the world's peace and harmony. I won't ever let anyone or anything hurt Mu Zi, while I still have a breath in my body." I had said that last statement with steeled determination.

## Chapter 22: The Return to the Stronghold

Seeing my resolution, Demon King Xiu Yu had a satisfied expression. Mu Zi also smiled sweetly at me. I already knew that my “Insulation wall” (The invisible wall that insulates the flames of my heart) was already getting increasingly weaker again.

I sighed inwardly before continuing to say, “Your Highness, I’ll have to trouble you to send some people to report this incident to the Demon Emperor. I’ve previously agreed with the Demon Emperor in finding evidences on the Monster race’s existence. The previous battle that you witnessed should be enough to prove that the Monster Race exists, right?”

Xiu Yu nodded. “It’s more than sufficient. It’s a pity about Satan. I’ll report honestly about this to His Majesty.”

After discussing some of the details with Xiu Yu, we bid our farewells with Xiu Yu and headed back towards Ström Fortress, in order to prevent Big Brother Shan Yun from getting too anxious as he waits for us.

These matters took up quite a lot of time as it was already daybreak. Rays from the sun started to gradually appear. Even though we were able to get the Beast and Demon alliance’s cooperation, I was still unable to find myself in a good mood. We had dealt with Jia Si Ke Li Duo, whose cultivation wasn’t at his full peak, with great difficulty. If the Monster King were to come personally, we would have been wiped out. In our current situation, it was a must for me to take the risk of accepting the Radiant God’s inheritance, in order to have sufficient strength to fight against the Monster race. Thinking about that, my mood was extremely sullen.

Mu Zi flew to my side. “Are you worrying about the Monster race?”

I nodded.

Mu Zi said, “According to what the God King had said, we should still have about 2 more years. During that period, everyone’s power will increase. You also don’t need to be too worried. Don’t we still have quite a lot of assistance? It’s a pity today that we weren’t able to eliminate the Monster that had infiltrated Uncle Satan’s body. Otherwise, we will be able to eliminate one of the right-hand men of the Monster King. Please don’t blame Uncle Xiu Yu for that?”

“I won’t blame him as it’s a natural decision. If I was him, I would have made the same choice. What assistance were you referring to?”

Mu Zi replied, “If everything goes well, it’ll be my royal father, the dragon race, the three human kingdoms, and the allied forces from the Demon and Beast’s Kingdoms. We should be able to fight against the Monster King then. What do you think?”

I sighed again. “The God King wasn’t able to do anything about the Monster King. Even though we are only dealing with his clone, the real experts that we can utilise is really insufficient. You should also know that my light magic and divine power is the most effective killing force against the Monster race. I have calculated that there’s only about 20 people that can fight against Jia Si Ke Li Duo. Do you think I still shouldn’t be worried?”

Mu Zi sighed. “Your worries are right so we must hastily settle with the

negotiation before we find a place to settle into. We should undergo closed door training for at least a year to improve all of our powers. It's a shame that I can't learn light magic. Otherwise, I'll definitely be able to help you."

Seeing her caring so much about me, I couldn't bear, but say, "I don't need your help. You just have to protect yourself." After saying that, I had instantly regretted.

As expected, after Mu Zi heard me say that, she moved close to me after a light flashed in her eyes before saying gently, "I will. Didn't you give me a mage's robe? I still couldn't bear to wear it."

The words that came out like water that had spilled and couldn't be taken back. I could only silently accept Mu Zi's feelings.

Finally, we rushed towards the place that we had previously appointed with Shan Yun before dawn fully arrived. The Earth Dragon Squad was already no longer in view. There was only Big Brother Shan Yun and his aide-de-camp.

When Shan Yun saw us, he asked anxiously, "Why did you take so long? I was worried. Is everything alright?"

Zhan Hu said, "Second brother, sorry for making you anxious. It can be counted as it being alright. Take a look, aren't we all back safely? Cough! Cough!"

"Third brother, what's wrong with you?"

“It’s nothing. I just suffered slight injuries. Xiu Si had already treated me so it isn’t serious.”

Shan Yun asked curiously, “The fireworks at the Demon’s main camp wasn’t from you?”

After hearing his query, Zhan Hu chuckled bitterly. “What fireworks? We were in a life and death battle. I was nearly unable to come back to meet up with you.”

“What on earth happened? I thought those were fireworks from the Demons to welcome the princess.”

I looked at the sky before saying, “Big Brother Shan Yun, it’s almost dawn. Let’s chat while we head back.”

Shan Yun responded. “Ah! That’s right. Let’s head back. When the patrol was over, I had already made my subordinates to head back first. You must also be tired. Let’s head back before continuing our discussion.”

.....

“So many things had transpired. It’s no longer a wonder on why you’re came back late.”

We were finally back at the prince’s interim manor. I was extremely tired after a night of stress and tension. I leaned back on the chair as I

listened to Zhan Hu relishly narrate what had happened to Shan Yun and the rest.

Mu Zi looked concerned for me before saying, “Everyone must be tired. Let’s rest up first.”

Xiu Si smiled mysteriously. “That’s right. Let’s hastily have some food before sleeping. I’m dead tired. I’ve used up a lot of energy giving you guys’ treatments.”

Jian Shan said, “You can rest at ease. We’re here for you. I’ll inform you if something happens.”

I suddenly thought about something and asked Xiu Si, “Big Brother Xiu Si, you previously mentioned that you brought 500 brothers with you. Where are they now?”

Xiu Si smiled mysteriously again and whispered into my ear, “They are already camouflaged as peddlers to infiltrate into the Ström Fortress already. You can be reassured. I’ve a planned signal with them. If anything happens, we’ll be able to swiftly gather them.”

I said, in smiles, and said yawning “How can I be worried from the way you do things? I’m heading to bed. I’m so tired.”

Shan Yun said, “You should have some food first.”

.....

The sun's rays were so bright that I turned my body and used a blanket to cover my head to carry on dreaming.

Suddenly, the door was knocked. 'Who is that being so noisy?' I said snappily, "The door isn't locked. Who is it? Just come in."

The door opened. 'It should be Xiu Si and the rest. Forget it, sleep comes first.'

Someone sat directly at the side of my bed. "Zhang Gong, how are you? You've slept for an entire day. Why aren't you up? Do you have any discomforts?" The voice was gentle and familiar. My mind suddenly became lucid. It was Mu Zi's. As she asked, her small and delicate hand caressed my face, making me feel so comfortable.

I immediately got up from my groggy state and hastily sat up. I grabbed onto her hand. "Why are you here?"

Mu Zi complained, displeased, "Why can't I be here? You've slept for an entire day. I was worried about you."

## Chapter 23: Who is the Rice Bucket?

I said awkwardly, “Can you get out first? I’m getting up now.”

Mu Zi stared wordlessly at me with hidden bitterness, giving me a fright. I tested the water by asking, “Can you go out first? I’ll immediately get up.”

Mu Zi pouted. “I want to service you in helping you get dressed. How about that?”

After her words fell, I quick wittedly jumped out of bed. After looking at my body, I felt much relaxed as I was still wearing my underwear. Otherwise, it would be too embarrassing.

Mu Zi, who had saw my looks, smiled and said gently, “Zhang Gong, behave and allow me to help you with your clothes.” After she said that, she brought my clothes from the side and walked towards me.

Perspiration flowed down from the hair at my temples. I replied stuttering, “No...No need.”

However, Mu Zi had already walked over. I stood there blankly as she dressed me. After finally being dressed, I looked as though I had ran 10 kilometers; my entire face was covered with perspiration.

Mu Zi used her sleeve to wipe the perspiration off my face as she warmly said, “Alright, let’s head out to eat. Everyone is waiting for you.”

I cried out involuntarily, “What? They know that you have come to get me?” After taking so much time, it was impossible for them not to think strange thoughts.

Mu Zi chuckled. “What’s there to be afraid of? They already know our relationship.”

As I perspired, how could I be not scared? “This kind of thing will damage your reputation.”

Mu Zi said, stunned, “Why should I be worried about my reputation when I’m with you? My reputation is all yours. Shouldn’t we be going? You scared about their idle chatter, but you’re here delaying.”

I hastily replied, “Then let’s be on our way, little miss.”

Mu Zi knew that she had won this battle so she complacently dragged me out from my room towards the lounge.

Mu Zi and I were the last to arrive, just as expected. Everyone looked at us dubiously. I smiled wryly as I said, “I’ve made my brothers wait for so long time. I previously.....”

Zhan Hu interrupted me as he laughed, “That’s enough. We’re brothers so there’s no need for explanation. We understand.”

Faint, what did he understand, my poor innocence, were you going to go

just like that?

Mu Zi didn't help me as she pulled me stylishly to my seat.

Xiu Si said, "Zhang Gong, you really can sleep as you slept for an entire day. If it wasn't for Princess Mu Zi to wake you up, I still don't know how much longer you'd sleep. The Demon-Beast alliance had already commenced our plan to retreat 15 km back. Currently, the tension at the Ström Fortress has become lighter."

Shan Yun said, "After the Demon-Beast alliance army retreated, I had discussed with the other two kingdom's commanders. Dun Yu Xi from your Aixia was really powerful. He already had some suspicions on the fireworks last night. Luckily, he saw it at quite a distance, but was able to point out that it was light magic."

I pondered. "The current situation is beneficial to us. After we wait for the prince to return and after your Xiuda's emperor agree in negotiating, everything can start smoothly. All we can do now is wait, so everyone should use this time to train. After fighting with the Monster race that day, I currently still feel discouraged. The Monster race's power is much more terrifying than what we previously imagined. If we aren't careful, we might sink into extinction."

Zhan Hu agreed. "That's right, it seems that it's impossible not to play with my life. After that attack from Satan I have to recuperate for a few days. My initial confidence is shattered. We indeed have a gap in power with those old monsters. I could only use about 30% of the War God's armour. However, after trying the training method that Zhang Gong has given me, there really is room for improvement. I've already started studying those methods with our brothers."

I rubbed my stomach. “The princess has previously told me that you had called me here for food. Where’s the meal? Brothers, your brother will soon be unable to stand it.”

Shan Yun smiled. “We’ve already prepared it. Just waiting for you to comment on it.” After hearing Shan Yun’s words, the crowd started to laugh.

I whispered to Shan Yun, “Did you prepare more food? My appetite....”

Shan Yun replied, “Relax, I know you can eat so I’ve ordered plenty. It’ll be sufficient for all of us to share.”

What did you say about me being able to eat when there was someone that had a stronger appetite than me? I sneaked a peek at Mu Zi and looked at her eagerness in getting her meal. I thought, ‘You all just have to wait. The one that can really eat is not me. I was nearly bankrupt for dealing with Mu Zi’s meal when I was still at the academy.’

Big Brother Shan Yun indeed prepared sumptuously. The table was covered with food with all different shapes and colours. Even though the food looked slightly crude, it was definitely much better than the meals at the Demon race. The resources of the three human kingdoms were really enriched so the Ström Fortress didn’t need to fret about food and water. It was convenient to decrease the provisions from the various Kingdoms’ state treasury so that they could get replaced with new reserves. The dishes’ scent made my stomach growl. I said to Shan Yun, “Big Brother Shan Yun, can you get something for Xiao Jin as well? That fellow is also a glutton.”

Shan Yun replied, “That’s unnecessary as the entire Ström Fortress knows that there’s a weird creature that flies all over the place. He flew out to find his own food.”

I chuckled and looked at everyone. “If that’s the case, let’s dig in.” Upon saying that, I unceremoniously began to eat the food. I didn’t need to see who would be the second to dig in as I knew it would be Mu Zi. Her delicate arm, carrying along a sweet scent, headed towards the delicacies on the table.

Zhan Hu cried out, “Everyone quickly dig in. If not, there won’t be any left for us.” Under his instigation, a merciless food battle began. The cavalry from Xiuda also became a round table calvary. However, they realised that no matter how hard they tried, they couldn’t beat the speed of Mu Zi or myself. At least half of the entire table’s food had entered our stomachs.

While I ate, I said indistinctly to Shan Yun, “Big Brother Shan Yun, can you get your subordinate to prepare two more tables of food? If not, there really isn’t enough to eat.”

Shan Yun only ate extremely little as he sat too close to me. He rarely was able to get the food he wanted. He smiled as he said, “You only went without food for a day. Why have you turned into such a state? Servants, prepare two more portions of food.”

After we started on the second table, everyone’s speed obviously decreased. Shan Yun was definitely able to eat. After the second table had diminished, everyone, excluding Mu Zi and I, had patted their stomach,

elated from having their fill.

Everyone's attentions had focused on Mu Zi, who was not highly thought of initially. Ke Lun Duo whispered to her, "Princess, don't you think that you should pay more attention to your bearings?"

## Chapter 24: Hopeful Peace Talks

Mu Zi grabbed onto an unknown animal's leg. "Why should I take note of my bearings? Everyone here is Zhang Gong's friend, so they're my friend as well. Why should I take note then? It has already been such a long time since I've had my fill."

Xiu Si said to Dong Ri. "How about we make a bet to see who will be the one that will eat the most?"

His words instantly aroused Dong Ri's interest. Dong Ri said, in smiles, "Alright, let's make a bet for everyone to guess who will be the last one standing."

"My guess will definitely be Zhang Gong."

"It might not be. I see that Princess Mu Zi has great potential."

.....

Finally, Xiu Si said, "How about this? I'll be the banker. Those that bet on Zhang Gong will receive a 1:1 payment while Mu Zi is 1:2 payment. Everyone place your bets."

"I place 10 diamond coins on Zhang Gong."

“I place 20 diamond coins on Zhang Gong.” I was a guy after all. I innately had an advantage and was well known as the “white rice bucket” so mostly everyone placed their bet on me.

While I ate the food from the third table, I asked, “Can I place a bet too?”

Xiu Si smiled. “You just have to eat. Don’t disappoint the crowd. What do you mean you want to place a bet? We’re afraid that you will go easy on her.”

I replied, feeling wronged, “I promise on my honor that I won’t go easy in this battle and eat till I’ve had my fill.”

Xiu Si replied, “You can place a bet as well. However, it will be a 1: 0.5 payment.”

“Alright.” I took out a top-grade green diamond from my space pocket and tossed it out. “I bet on Princess Mu Zi to win.”

Everyone that had placed their bet on me were dumbfounded. Ke Lun Duo wanted to remove his bet as they understood that I had been with Mu Zi for the longest period of time. Under the situation that I don’t cheat, my decisions were always concluded from experience.

Xiu Si protected the betted money and said, “Nobody can cheat, just continue looking on. Zhang Gong might not lose.”

I was really famished after not eating for an entire day. However, I was a human so I had a limit. After eating half of the third table's food, I was full. After forcing myself to eat a few more mouthfuls, I really couldn't eat any further and stopped.

Everyone was looking at Mu Zi , who was still eating with gusto. If it wasn't for their eye sockets being so deep, a pile of eyes would have landed on the floor.

Mu Zi's pace had slowed down. It was due to chewing for too long, according to her. Even though her pace slowed, she didn't have any intention of stopping and maintained her pace to eat the entire third table's food. After Mu Zi used a clean towel to wipe her hands and patted her semi-protruding stomach, everyone thought that she had her fill and heaved a sigh of relief.

Just as I wanted to take the money I had won, Mu Zi said, "Excuse me, is there any desserts after the meal?"

The outcome of her question was that the tea cup in Zhan Hu's hand dropped and shattered on the ground; Xiu Si dropped all of the diamond coin that he was carrying; Shan Yun fell from his chair ; Xin Ao and Gao De were coughing unceasingly from being choked with their tea; Jian Shan spat out the tea he was drinking, which had landed on Ke Lun Duo's face. Only I, who had some preparation, was also shocked. I still staggered a little, but didn't quite fall over.

Mu Zi's charming face had a faint blush as she said, displeased, "Why is everyone's appetite so small? Is it really that shocking?"

While Jian Shan wiped the tea off of Ke Lun Duo's face, he muttered, "If that was just a small meal for you, when you eat to your fill, won't you consume all of the food from Ström Fortress?"

I took the money that I won from Xiu Si and shook my head. "Alright, since we had our meal, after we digest for a while, let's do self training. We are currently racing against time."

.....

We had been continuously training in this period of time. Everyone had been doing their best. Using Uncle Firewood's experiences as a guide, Zhan Hu and the rest that trained in battle spirit had improved at an exceptional pace. They had already magnanimously forgave Ke Lun Duo and allowed him to train with them. Even though I didn't have a qualitative leap in power, I had reinforced the three great powers in my body; my fusion with the Holy Sword was much higher.

Mu Zi was currently together with Xiao Rou, they were always by my side. My meals and daily necessities were covered by their care. I could feel the gestures of love that Mu Zi was giving me. My heart was completely focused on her. How could I not be moved by how she was treating me? Our relationship had improved in this period of time, as I was gradually starting to accept her. I no longer called her Princess, but instead started calling her Mu Zi again. She didn't pressure me at all during this period of time, so the change in my attitude towards her made her feel gratified, which resulted to her treating me extraordinary well. Xiao Rou's kind and cheeky personality was undoubtedly expressed as she surrounded me daily and took turns with Mu Zi to take care of me. Her

reliance on me increased day by day. With Mu Zi's intelligence, she definitely knew about it, but she still happily accepted her, so her interaction with Xiao Rou's was extremely harmonious.

After two months.

“Zhang Gong, Zhang Gong.”

“Big Brother Shan Yun, you’re back.”

“Zhang Gong, I’ve got good news. My father has come back, but he directly headed to the commander’s division. He told me to inform you that His Majesty has already agreed to negotiate.”

I was elated. This was really a excellent news. “That’s awesome. When shall I head over to meet uncle?”

Shun Yun smiled. “Must you be in such a rush? Father is currently discussing with the other two Kingdom’s commanders. He’ll pass on the Emperor of Xiuda’s decision to them. When it’s time for your appearance, we’ll notify you. You just need to be prepared.”

“Thank you, Big Brother Shan Yun.”

Shan Yun withdrew his smile and showed a sincere expression. “Zhang Gong, do you know that in the period that I’ve spent with you guys is the happiest time of my life?”

His words moved me. "Me too, Big Brother Shan Yun."

"Alright, continue training. I still have a few matters to attend to. You'll probably get accurate reports in the next two days. You should make preparations."

Seeing Shan Yun's fading back, I couldn't help but feel nervous, as I was going to meet Teacher Dun Yu Xi and Dalu's Marshall Feng Hao. I didn't know how they would treat me.

"Zhang Gong, why aren't you training? Are you slacking?" Mu Zi's angelic voice sounded behind me. She had already recovered her original beauty. There were often people that would fall into a daze and blush after seeing her impeccable looks, but she didn't care. I had once told her to cover up her appearance, but she said that her appearance was for me to see so that I would be unable to forget her forever.

Seeing Mu Zi, gentle feelings flowed out from my heart. In smiles, I replied, "I'm not slacking. It's just that Big Brother Shan Yun has come and told me that the Prince has successfully convinced the Emperor of Xiuda to agree in negotiating with us. The negotiation has hope now."

## Chapter 25: Annihilating the Bandits

Mu Zi said excitedly, “Ah! That’s amazing. Our hope has increased once again. I’ll go and tell them now.”

I nodded. “You should go tell Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest for them to be prepared.”

Mu Zi bounced away vivaciously. In this period of time, she had become increasingly lively, probably due to Xiao Rou’s influence on her.

After dinner, the prince and Shan Yun came back together from the Prince’s interim manor. Even though the Prince seemed to have lost a lot of weight, his spirit was exceptionally high and his complexion was rosy.

We had welcomed them into the lounge.

“Uncle, you’ve worked hard.”

“Haha! Zhang Gong, what does this small amount of work count for? I’m willing to suffer much more, in order to make this a success. The trip to Xiuda was much smoother than expected. His Majesty had frankly agreed to the negotiation and passed me full authority. When Zi Hao Jin heard that there were five God inheritors from our Xiuda, he was proud like they were his children. He said that us humans have gotten used to peace and doesn’t wish to continue fighting. It’s the best choice to follow what the citizens wants. Moreover, there was God’s intervention among with this matter.”

Xiu Si said, “Your Highness. You will be a main contributor if this negotiation were to work. Initially, we weren’t confident, but after hearing your good news, we are much more confident now.”

The prince smiled. “You’re the heroes of Xiuda and humanity. You can all just call me Uncle like Zhang Gong does from now on. His Majesty has already dispatched envoys to pass his intentions to the other two kingdoms. After a short while, the other kingdoms should have gotten an order to come here. It’ll be up to them whether this negotiation works. I feel that Dalu shouldn’t be a problem, but the Kingdom of Aixia that is the problem. Regarding overall strength, their kingdom that has all of their citizens learn magic is the strongest among the three kingdoms.”

Due to the prince’s words, I had immediately thought about the few teachers’ powerful magic prowess before nodding in agreement. “If there’s no other way, we’ll use action to scare them. Uncle, we’ve greatly improved our powers in this period of time. It should have some use during this negotiation.”

The prince replied, satisfied, “You’re such hard working youths. It’ll be your era from now on. I heard from Ah Hu that you have a force in the mountains at the border of the three kingdoms.”

Xiu Si glared at Zhan Hu. “That’s right, we’re only just a small troop with a few thousand small teams.”

The prince smiled. “In the news that I had received that isn’t the case. Recently, the small teams that you said have already eliminated all of the bandits on the borders of the all three kingdoms. There is over ten thousand of them. Your ‘small troop’s’ fighting power is a little too strong. Their current movements in clearing up the borders has brought

them into the eyes of the three kingdoms, even though they have made a huge contribution to the citizens in the various kingdoms.”

Xiu Si and I looked at each other. Actually, we already received that news. Currently, our forces had covered the enter area that wasn't maintained by the three kingdoms. In the letter that the five great elders had written, they said that they had annihilated the bandits in the surrounding to increase their powers. They had completely obliterated those bandits that had greatly jeopardised the lives of citizens, while those that had small wrongdoings were forced to surrender. They were currently giving those people intense training in hopes that they could be sent out for battle in the short period of time remaining. The total age of the five elders had surpassed 400, so Xiu Si and I were reassured about them taking charge. Even if we were attacked by the main army, we wouldn't be afraid. In the reply that Xiu Si had given to the five elders, it had some suggestions. For example, due to the troops' disorganization, in order to supervise, we would definitely have to send some of our people back. This was only a few days back. Yet, it was beyond our expectation that the prince's information gathering was that effective.

I clenched my teeth before calmly saying, “So what if the three kingdoms has placed their focus on us? I don't want to lie to you. We had established a town in the surrounding mountains, where the three kingdoms intersect, as our town's walls. Our main forces are there. We've seen the strength of the Monster race. If I don't have a force that I can command as though they were my arms and legs, how can we fight against the Monster race?”

After the prince heard my words, he frowned. “Even if that is the case, I hope that you don't act too ostentatiously. If you arouse the three kingdoms' encirclement and annihilation, it wouldn't be good.”

I looked at Zhan Hu, who was silently looking downwards, before refuting, “We don’t have any animosity to the three kingdoms. Our sole enemy is the Monster King. If the three kingdoms can’t accept that and attack us, the one that is at the losing end will be you guys. I’ll tell you this fact. At our base, under the leadership of the five elders, they possesses the Sword saint power.”

The prince was shocked. “Sword Saint?” Sword Saints and War Gods were something that every citizen from the Kingdom of Xiuda, who respected martial strength, wished to become. The prince naturally knew what a Sword Saint meant.

I continued, “So, I hope that you’ll support us in this case. Regarding how we will be after the elimination of the Monster race, we’ll have to wait and see when that time comes. Perhaps, there aren’t many of us that will survive the ordeal.” Saying that, I was a little mournful. To all the brothers that follow us, as long as I have a breath, I definitely wouldn’t allow the Monster race to easily harm you.

The prince gradually calmed. “Zhang Gong, don’t misunderstand. Our Xiuda doesn’t have any ill intention towards you. If you need anything, we can also help to replenish your forces regarding the logistics aspect. Before I returned here, His Majesty warned me repeatedly to ally with you as a prevention for unnecessary suspicions.”

As expected of a politician, after knowing our tyrannical power, he immediately changed his attitude. But my previous good nature towards the prince had slightly diminished. “Uncle, don’t worry. We have a mission to protect the world’s peace and harmony, so we are definitely your ally. To us, all creatures, be it the Demon race, Beast race, Nature Elves, Dwarves, Humans and other races, are our ally. The only enemy we have is that fellow, who is planning to disrupt the peace and harmony. As

for the supplements, we have our own means so we won't need to trouble you for that." The increase in power had given me confidence. No matter what, we were currently a over ten thousand squads strong. I really didn't need them to supplement us, as for every gem that I sold at random could sustain us for a while. Moreover, currently, we were constructing a self-sufficient system at our base. If that were to succeed, it would be sufficient to provide for our people.

## Chapter 26: Pledge of Undying Love

The Prince chuckled awkwardly. “I can be rest assured in that case. Do you want to accompany me in meeting with the other two commanders tomorrow? Even though they don’t have any orders from their kingdom, it will be better for you to explain the circumstances to them.”

“It won’t be a problem as it’s my responsibility. We’ll head there with you tomorrow.”

“Alright, I won’t disturb your rest any further.”

Everyone stood up to see off the prince.

“Zhan Hu, how could you tell your father about our matters? If it didn’t go well, it might have ruined the base that we have been bitterly constructing. Do you understand? How can you be so irresponsible?” Xiu Si, who had never fumed, angered after sending the prince off.

Zhan Hu looked helplessly at me before muttering, “I...I just blurted it out. I’m sorry.”

I held Xiu Si back. “Let’s forget about it. Big Brother Xiu Si, Big Brother Zhan Hu also doesn’t wish for any mishaps. They will also find that out sooner or later.”

Xiu Si sighed. “Zhan Hu, I might have said it too harshly, but we are currently at a critical juncture so we can’t make even the slightest

mistake. If there's a mistake that were to happen, not only will we be finished, there won't be any forces in the world left that can mediate in integrating the various races to deal with the Monster King."

I patted Zhan Hu, whose face was covered with perspiration. "What Big Brother Xiu Si said is right. Big Brother, you must pay more attention in the future. Even though the Prince and the rest are the close with you, when we are dealing with the fate of the world, we mustn't be careless. Xiu Si also meant well. It definitely wasn't personal."

Zhan Hu sheepishly replied, "I know that I'm in the wrong. Zhang Gong, I'll control my mouth from now on."

I smiled. "That's for the best. Alright, it's already very late. How about some supper? Big Brother Xiu Si, you should also stop being angry."

.....

Mu Zi and I were strolling in the courtyard. The night was mesmerizing. The wind brought a refreshing feeling with it as it blew.

Mu Zi held onto my hand. "Zhang Gong, our plans finally has hope, but why are you still unhappy?"

I smiled. "This is only part of our plans. Even if it's important, it's not the most crucial part. I'm worried about the Monster King, as we don't know when he will suddenly appear before us. We're in the open, while he's in hiding. Even while I'm at my best, when I try imaging his strength, I get a sense of foreboding. After these matters here are over, I want to

head to a place to further improve my powers. The God King had said that only if I head there, I will then really have the power to fight against the Monster King.”

Mu Zi asked, astonished, “What place? I’ve never heard this from you before.”

“Currently I can’t tell you that, as I don’t know if it’s good or bad to head there. Mu Zi, please promise me that if something was to happen to me, you must take care of yourself and find another person who will love you, alright?”

After hearing what I said, Mu Zi’s eye rim reddened. “Zhang Gong, why are you still asking me such things at this point? You’re the only one that can bring me joy in this world. After experiencing so many up and downs, can it be that you don’t have faith in me?”

I smiled as I shook my head before gently wiping off her tears that flowed from her eyes. “Don’t misunderstand. It’s not that I don’t trust you, but it’s only natural to wish her all the best when loving somebody. When everything is over and I survive, we can still be like we are now. I’ll definitely take care of you for all eternity. However, it’s hard to predict what happens in the future, as neither you nor I know what will happen. I don’t wish for you to abandon your life’s happiness for me. Do you understand? Please promise me that no matter what happens, you’ll still live on happily, alright?”

Mu Zi abruptly clung on my neck as she burst into tears. My heart was very calm because I had finally said what I had been storing in my heart. I gently hugged her waist as I let her to freely vent her feelings.

It was a long time before Mu Zi gradually stopped crying. The clothes on my shoulder were soaked. I lifted her charming face and gently nudged her reddened nose as I teased her, "Aiya! Mu Zi, why is your nose so red? Should I get Big Brother Xiu Si to give it a look?"

Mu Zi pouted her small adorable mouth as she turned tears to laughter. "You're detestable. You only know how to bully me."

I gently kissed on her forehead. "How is my previous suggestion? You still haven't answered me."

Mu Zi, who had just stopped crying, teared again. While she hit on my shoulder, she shouted, "Not good! Not Good! Ten thousand times not good!"

I grabbed on her fist. "Mu Zi, don't be like this. Why are you acting like a child? You have to face the reality, alright?"

Feeling wronged, Mu Zi lifted her head and replied, "Why? Why must you always push me away? I'll give you a clear answer. I, Mu Zi, will solely love Zhang Gong Wei for all eternity. No matter what changes you may have, as long as you're alive, I'll stay by your side to serve and take care of you forever, in order to be your most obedient and loving wife. If... If you were to die, I still won't change and chase you to the next world to continue being your wife. Please don't push me away. If you still don't want me, I'll die in front of you right now."

Mu Zi's firm conviction had broken through my last defence against her. I could no longer deny her overflowing feelings. I tightly embraced

her and frantically kissed every part of her face before finally landing on her cherry lips. Mu Zi also gradually became passionate as I expressed my love for her, as she frantically responded to me.

Luckily, we were in the courtyard and not in a room. Otherwise, I really didn't know what would happen. I reluctantly left her slightly swollen red lips after a long time. I looked deeply in her eyes. "Mu Zi, I love you. I really do. My love for you has never changed. I won't avoid my feelings any longer, in order to make you the happiest girl in this world. I'll use everything within my power to protect and cherish you. Will you be my wife?"

We calmly looked at each other. Tears were flowing down Mu Zi's face as she constantly nodded. Her translucent tears drifted through the air, creating a moving scene.

"I'm willing. I really am. I'm willing to be Zhang Gong Wei's wife through all of eternity and will never leave you."

The great God inheritor, Child of Light, Grand Magister Zhang Gong Wei and the Demon race's princess, Dark elemental Magister Mu Zi, had certified their love under the mesmerizing moon light on this very night as they swore to be together for their entire life.

# Chapter 27: Freely Talking about the Situation

Morning at the three main camps.

Dun Yu Xi, who was wearing a yellow mage robe, said, “Marshall Feng Hao, that old fellow from Xiuda will be bringing the God inheritors in a bit. What’s your opinion on this matter?” Even though Dun Yu Xi knew about the Monster King, he didn’t know about my God Inheritor’s identity.

Marshall Feng Hao was tall, had a handsome appearance, and was wearing a warrior’s uniform. As he looked at the strategy’s map, he replied, “The prince must have made some preparations on this matter. To be truthful, I also support the negotiations, but I don’t know how sincere the Demon-Beast alliance is. War is really an arduous task.”

“Reporting! The prince has arrived.”

“Quickly invite him in.”

Xiu Si, Zhan Hu, Xin Ao, Gao De, Dong Ri, Ke Lun Duo, Mu Zi and I, the eight of us followed the prince into the main camp. Since I feared being recognised, Mu Zi and I came in last.

The prince laughed. “Come, I’ll give a group introduction. This is Marshall Feng Hao from the Kingdom of Dalu and this is Aixia’s Royal Mage Union’s leader, Magister Dun Yu Xi.”

Marshall Feng Hao smiled frankly. “I welcome all of you. Please take a seat.” I could hear that he hadn’t acknowledged our identity as God’s Inheritor as he didn’t mention us with our identity.

“The prince has already told us about the matters regarding the Monster race. Magister Dun Yu Xi also has verified that the Monster race have appeared within the world. We must resist them, but do you have a solid plan for doing so?” Why are people, who were only slightly older, be so devious? Marshall Feng Hao had avoided the topic on negotiating and just briefly commented on resisting the Monster race.

Xiu Si smiled calm and collectedly. “What you asked is great. According to what we know, the Monster race is extremely powerful. If they were to appear in the world, they will create irreversible damage to all of the life forms in the world. Thus, we must make preparations for their coming from the start in order to be on standby for their coming and deliver a frontal assault. Even though I can’t guarantee that we could completely eliminate or force a retreat, it’s definitely possible for us to maintain minimal losses for the price in getting what we want to accomplish.”

Upon saying that, Xiu Si intentionally paused as he looked that the two Kingdom’s commanders, who were burrowing their head in contemplation. He then continued to say with confidence, “As expected, if we really want to resist against the powerful Monster race, we won’t be able to do it with just our own human forces alone. It’s undeniable that we humans are one of the strongest races in the world. However, we aren’t the strongest as the Demon and Beast races similarly possess great powers like our own.

I feel that this current stalemate is completely meaningless as when the allied Demon and Beast races doesn’t commence their attack, we can’t attack them. This will only damage the various races’ resources and

military forces if this were to continue. Our Human race, Demon race and Beast race are the top three strongest forces in the world. If all three races were to be injured, the Monster King could easily lead his sinister race to successfully invade our world. If we were to reconcile with the other races now, it'll be beneficial to all of us. Otherwise, it'll lead to the races' death. Currently, we're gathering all the powers that we can get to gain the chance to resist the Monster race."

Mu Zi and I looked at each other as what Xiu Si said was brilliant. What he said was based on reasons and facts so they couldn't decide to ignore what we have to say.

Marshall Feng Hao slightly nodded. "You're extremely correct. If the Monster race is really that powerful and is in the dark, the situation we are in is really very dangerous. However, with the Demon-Beast alliance still biding their time, how can I believe that they really are sincere in negotiating?"

Xiu Si replied, unruffled, "You don't have to worry about that as not long ago, the leader of the God inheritors has led some of the God's inheritors to personally head to the Demon race, in order to discuss on negotiating with the Demon Emperor. Under the leader's leadership, they were able to convince the Demon Emperor and got the approval for negotiating."

Dun Yu Xi asked, astonished, "The Demon race is willing to sit down with the Human race to negotiate? It's just too impossible with their hatred towards our race."

Xiu Si solemnly replied, "Of course, this matter isn't as easy as I've said. The leader of the God's inheritors has personally fought against the Demon Emperor. Finally, using the powers that were bestowed by the

God, he was able to get a draw from the Demon Emperor, who had rode his Dark Dragon. We were then able to gain the Emperor's respect, allowing us to earn the opportunity to negotiate. The negotiation came with a severe price to convince the Demon Emperor to agree to reconciles. That God Inheritor has also suffered severe injuries, which resulted to the disfiguration of his original handsome looks."

The modulation of the tone by Xiu Si was extremely touching in that short speech. This fellow was really good at lying. I had completely lost, but when he said I had tied with the Demon Emperor, his complexion didn't redden, nor was he gasping. This was the first time that I knew how skillful Big Brother Xiu Si was.

After hearing what Xiu Si said, the three Kingdom's commanders, including the prince that didn't know about this, simultaneously became frightened. The Demon Emperor in their heart was unbeatable. It was exceptionally shocking now that they know that there is someone from the Human race that could tie with him.

Feng Hao asked hastily, "Where is that great God's Inheritor now? Can we see this hero now? He will forever be revered as a hero among the three human Kingdoms, just from being able to tie with the Demon Emperor, even if we were exclude the success in establishing the negotiation."

Xiu Si turned around and gave me an indication, using his eyes. This fellow knew how to hurry me in showing my identity. Under the condition where I didn't have any alternative choice, I slowly walked forth and bowed towards them before saying calmly, "My greetings to you Marshall and Teacher Xi, do you still remember me?"

Dun Yu Xi's body froze. "You...You are?"

I took down my conical hat that was covering my appearance as I said, in smiles, "Take a good look."

Even though I was disfigured, my bearings and voice were already engraved in Dun Yu Xi's mind. He suddenly exclaimed, "Zhang Gong! Is that you, Zhang Gong?!"

I donned the conical hat again and slightly nodded. "Teacher Xi, it's me. It has been a long time since we seen each other. How have you been?"

Dun Yu Xi sighed after seeing my appearance. "I'm alright, but how did you turn out like this?"

"Didn't Big Brother Xiu Si just told you?"

Dun Yu Xi paled with fright. "It can't be that you're that God's Inheritor that tied when fighting against the Demon Emperor, right?"

I nodded. "That's right, the God King didn't deny me and had personally bestowed me his Holy Sword, giving us the task in eliminating the Monster King. The wounds on my face were the marks left behind after fighting with the Demon Emperor."

## Chapter 28: The Marshall's Daughter

Marshall Feng Hao nudged Dun Yu Xi, who was stunned. "Brother Xi, you know him?"

Dun Yu Xi sighed. "Not only do I know him, we worked together before. His teacher in my Kingdom's Royal Intermediate Magic Academy's principal. You should have heard of the third Magister in the world, Lao Lun Di. He was the hope of my Kingdom, who is the new generation that had trained to the Magister's realm. We originally have great expectations on him. It was a pity that after some matter, he got in a conflict with His Majesty Ke Zha. Your Dalu should have also gotten the wanted order to arrest him."

I said coldly, "That's right, I'm a wanted person for the Kingdom of Aixia, but similarly, I'm also the God King's envoy. Teacher Dun Yu Xi, you can say what had happened that resulted to me being wanted."

I then used what I told the prince to them as to why I needed to reunite the various races and the reason why I couldn't let Mu Zi go. They constantly nodded as they heard what I was saying. I realised that I had a potential in being a go-between.

After hearing my narration, Dun Yu Xi sighed. "So that was the case, it seems that we were wrong about you."

Marshall Feng Hao smiled. "God's envoy Zhang Gong, you have my respect in doing so much things for the world's peace and harmony, but for the human race's officers and soldiers, I hope that you can prove the sincerity of the Demon and Beast races in negotiating."

I knew that he would say that. “That is easy. Everyone should know that the Beast race works for the Demon race. The successor in line for the Demon race is Princess Mu Zi, who had come to Aixia as a spy. The Demon Emperor had sent her here as a negotiator for the negotiation here. Does that prove their sincerity? Your Royal Highness, you should make your appearance.”

Mu Zi moved to my side and slightly bowed towards them. “Greetings to you, I’m the Princess of the Demon race, Mu Zi Mo.”

Dun Yu Xi knew Mu Zi. “Mu Zi, is that really you? You’re the Demon race’s princess? This is your original motive in coming to Aixia.”

Mu Zi replied indifferently, “That’s right, I’m the successor of the Demon race. The purpose in coming here this time is to negotiate with the Human race. Even though our races are different, we have the same enemy now. We should unite and resist our enemies. I had come with God’s envoy Zhang Gong here for that reason. I hope that we can reconcile.”

Feng Hao sized up Mu Zi. He was worthy to be a Marshall of Dalu as he didn’t lose his bearing even after seeing Mu Zi’s impeccable looks. I said excitedly, “Since the Demon Emperor had sent you to negotiate, it has proved his sincerity. I’ll report this to my Kingdom’s Emperor. Our Dalu doesn’t have any interest in fighting. I personally support you in negotiating.”

Under our cooperation, Dun Yu Xi didn’t have a choice but to support us so he had expressed his intentions in waiting for his higher ups to decide

in this.

A familiar voice came from outside as we discussed the negotiation terms. “Father! Father!”

Everyone turned to look at that person that was barging in. I couldn’t help, but be shocked when I saw her. Wasn’t that the girl that I had saved from being trampled by horses? Why was she here finding her father? Who was her father? Once she entered, after seeing that there was so many people, she immediately stopped talking.

Marshall Feng Hao said fumingly, “This is an important place for military discussions. Who let you in?”

The young lady lowered her head and whispered, “But I’ve come to find you for some matters.”

Feng Hao said helplessly, “My apologise to everyone. This is my little girl Lian Na. I feel bad for this interruption.”

The prince said frankly, “I heard that Marshall has a pretty daughter. I didn’t expect that I’ll be able to see her here. This is like father and daughter going into battle.” His words meant to be a sarcasm as Lian Na wasn’t like Big Brother Shan Yun to come to battle with the army.

Marshall Feng Hao replied, embarrassed, “It’s my fault for spoiling her since young. Lian Na, you’re increasingly becoming outrageous. Why are you still not withdrawing?”

Lian Na seemed to have not heard him and looked fixedly at me. She suddenly exclaimed, “It’s you! Why are you here?”

“Lian Na, don’t be impolite. Do you know this God’s envoy?”

Lian Na neglected her father and hastily walked before me before saying lovably, “It’s really you. Father, he was the one that saved me that day.”

Mu Zi glared at me. I awkwardly replied, “My greetings to Miss Lian Na. It was only a coincidence that I helped you that day. You don’t have to mind it.”

Feng Hao cupped his fists. “It seems that Lord God’s envoy has saved my daughter. I thank you for that.” He only had one daughter in his life and was his treasure. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have spoilt Lian Na to be willful. He felt much appreciated in me saving his daughter, instead of him being saved.

“Marshall, you do not need to be so courteous. It was really just a coincidence. Your daughter might have come to you for some matters. Let’s stop the discussion here today and wait for the two kingdoms’ decision to come before discussing again. We shall take our leave.” What I wanted to do was mostly done already so what was the use in staying here?

Marshall Feng Hao replied anxiously, “No! God’s envoy, you can’t leave now. You’ve saved my daughter. How can I not repay your favour? Please stay here for a meal today.”

Mu Zi pinched in the back. It was obvious she didn't agree for me to stay here. How could I not listen to Mu Zi? I politely rejected the Marshall's kind intentions, but he expressed a resolution that wasn't showed previously. He forcefully pulled me along to have a meal with him, no matter what I said. Since I didn't have a choice, I could only agree. Xiu Si and the rest had found their excuses to leave first. Those fellows were so heartless. Mu Zi definitely wouldn't leave as she wanted to watch me, while Ke Lun Duo had to protect her so the three of us were left.

The meal was extremely sumptuous. There were the prince, Marshall, Dun Yu Xi, cheeky little Miss Lian Na and the three of us at the table.

Lian Na was extremely enthusiastic as she kept getting dishes for me. Mu Zi, who usually had great appetite, was quiet today and ate very little. She also didn't look at me, making me to be at a loss of what to do. The meal with Marshall Feng Hao and his passionate daughter passed with great difficulty. Lian Na had shown me an uncovered good feelings towards me. She unexpectedly didn't care, even after I showed my scarred filled face. She still said that I was a hero to be able to withdraw after fighting against the Demon Emperor. I knew that she blindly revered me from her words. Power was the key in this world. Even though I was ugly, my exceptional power had overwhelmed the fact that I was ugly.

## Chapter 29: Dramatic Change

I realised that my undergarments were drenched after walking out from the main camp. Excessive passion could really make people uncomfortable.

Mu Zi told Ke Lun Duo, “Big Brother Si Wa, you can head back first. I want to have a stroll with Zhang Gong.”

Ke Lun Duo agreed and gave me a “wish you all your best” look before heading off. I found that Mu Zi was sulky before the meal. It should be due to Lian Na. Her angry looks were so adorable. I didn’t ask her anything and just walked leisurely by her side.

The afternoon sun was still intense. I realised that there was perspiration at the hair at Mu Zi’s temple. I gathered some magic to cast a water spell above her head to help her block the sun. Mu Zi turned back and pouted her lips towards me.

I chuckled. “Are they for me to kiss?”

Mu Zi jumped up in shock. She hastily used her hand to cover her lips and said with a flushed face, “You’re irritating. Tell me honestly in details on how you know that girl.”

I replied innocently, “Didn’t I say it earlier? I just saved her once.”

Mu Zi snorted. “Who knows if you knew each other long ago? If not,

how can she be so passionate towards you?"

I smiled wryly. "What I said is the truth. I'm also clueless as to why they are so passionate today as I only met her once. I'm already so ugly. Who will want me now, excluding you? Could it be that you're jealous?"

Mu Zi hit me once before saying, "Who's jealous? You're so annoying."

I chuckled. "I remembered that you were really magnanimous previously to often give me to someone else. Why have you changed now?"

Mu Zi replied with slight anger, "Can't I change? You're right. I'm jealous. You're forbidden to be with someone else, excluding Sister Hai Shui, from now on. Have you listened to what I said? If not, I won't forgive you."

I expressed a "What can you do about me" look as I replied with a mischievous smile, "How are going to not forgive me?"

Mu Zi's face blushed as she raised her head to ponder. "You'll be sleeping on couches after our marriage and I won't allow you to be near me. How's that? I'm powerful, right?" Her naive looks was really adorable. It had been such a long time since she showed such feelings towards me.

I gently embraced her before replying with my feelings, "You're the one I love the most in my life. Even though I've some feelings for Hai Shui, I don't know if she will accept me with my current looks. I'll give her some time to decide. If she accepts me, I'll treat her as well as I usually do. If

she's unwilling, I'll let her go. How's that? I don't have any interest with other girls. I've got a question. Who will ever be prettier than my Mu Zi?"

Mu Zi's body slumped. It was obvious that my words were really effective. "Sister Hai Shui shouldn't be such a shallow person. She definitely will stay by your side as I am. What we love is your heart and person, not your appearance."

I smiled. "Let's hope that's the case. We should head back now. Otherwise, I don't know what they will say."

Gao De teased us once we returned to the Prince's interim manor. "Aiya! Our God's envoy, who is being controlled by his wife, has finally returned."

I mockingly scolded him, "What do you mean that I'm being controlled by my wife? We just went for a stroll."

Xin Ao also walked over. "It can't be, according to the information we gathered. Quickly let me see what punishment Mu Zi had implemented on you."

Ke Lun Duo looked at me with innocent eyes. "Don't blame me. They forced me to tell them. I could only sacrifice you for my little life."

Mu Zi swatted Xin Ao's extended hand and laid in my embrace as she said gently, "Who says that our Zhang Gong is being controlled by his wife? You shouldn't make irresponsible comments. Previously, I went with him as he lectured me. It was my bad to be impolite during the

previous lunch. Everyone, please forgive me.” Not only did they feel astonished after hearing her declaration, it was also beyond my expectation.

I felt care free. It felt as if every pore in my body had opened up. When I looked at Gao De, Xin Ao and the others stunned expressions. I felt so much better. I raised my head as I carried Mu Zi towards my room. (Please don’t misunderstand. I don’t have any ill intentions.)

I kissed heavily on Mu Zi’s flushed face. “Why did you give me so much face just now? You’re so well behaved.”

Mu Zi leaned on my chest as she whispered, “It is how it should be. You’re to listen to me at home, but when in public, I’ll listen to you. That way you’ll be well respected by others. If a guy let others know that his wife controlled him at home, it would affect your image in their hearts.”

I smiled. “My good Mu Zi, you’re really great. You didn’t know how complacent I was.”

A sliver of cunningness flashed passed Mu Zi’s eyes. “Did you clearly hear what I said previously? You must listen to me at home and not rebel against me.”

I, who was filled with happiness, didn’t think of the outcome before patting my chest and saying, “No problem, you’re the master at home and I’m the master out in public. I’ll definitely listen to you at home.” Mu Zi complacently smiled, but didn’t say further.

The prince had received news after ten days. The decisions from Aixia and Dalu had already came. We were summoned to discuss further negotiations.

I felt that the atmosphere wasn't right after entering the main camp as the three commander's expression were grim.

"What's the matter? Dalu and Aixia didn't agree to the negotiation?"

The prince replied, "It's nothing serious and is almost done. In the letter, it had mentioned that the Kingdom of Dalu has already allied with the Kingdom of Aixia. The troops from Dalu will temporarily be under the Kingdom of Aixia's leadership. The Emperor of Aixia, Ke Zha Ao Er, will personally command in the battlefield. They also mentioned that the two other Kingdom's forces, excluding the calvary of Xiuda, will be under Ke Zha's control. The letter didn't clearly state whether they were going to fight or reconcile, but I think that we'll be meeting with great obstructions."

Zhan Hu asked Marshall Feng Hao, "Lord Marshall, isn't your Kingdom of Dalu usually peaceful? Why did they ally with Aixia to make such a fuss?"

Feng Ao sighed. "I also don't know what His Majesty is thinking. However, I'm from the army so I've got to listen to my orders. My apologies to everyone."

I coldly snorted, "I don't know how many benefits Aixia gave your Kingdom to make you kingdom to be willing to temporarily pass their military powers to you? It's still too absurd." Suddenly, my thoughts

turned as I got the general idea. Aixia was famous for their mages. If they were to bribe the Kingdom of Dalu, they could only use mages to move Dalu, who was already rich and imposing. 'Hmph! Ke Za, you want to play this conspiracy with me? Alright, I'll play with you till the end.'

# Chapter 30: Deployed for the Mission

I gathered everyone after returning to the Prince's manor. Since time was pressing, I couldn't continue to be courteous.

"Big Brother Xiu Si, can I trouble you to gather all of the brothers into the Ström Fortress as soon as possible? Since there are 500 of them, we can temporarily call them a Guardian Battalion. The 500 of them will be divided into 5 groups, known as the first five companies. It will be up to you, Big Brother Zhan Hu, Gao De, Xin Ao and Dong Ri who will lead those five companies. When you hear the signal, you're to immediately gather at the eastern entrance.

The current situation is extremely disadvantageous towards us. I also don't know what outcome there will be when Ke Zha comes. They'll most probably be against us so everyone must be prepared to breakout from the encirclement. Twelve of you guys, including Mu Zi, Brother Ke and Jian Shan are to follow me. I'll instruct Xiao Jin to bring Xiao Rou out of the city first, so later they will be able to receive us at the eastern entrance at all times. Xiuda already has a peace agreement with us after all. Everyone is to be gathered here as soon as possible."

After I made the arrangements, Xiu Si told me, "Zhang Gong, you actually don't have to be this tense. Even though the tables are against us, I reckon that with Ke Zha's cunningness, he shouldn't make a move against us. Currently, one of the three powers is supporting the negotiation after all. The officers and soldiers also don't want to fight. Currently, we must defend against his conspiracy."

I smiled as I whispered to Xiu Si, "The reason I want to gather everyone

is not only to prepare for a retreat, but I also plan to make them cower with our military might at crucial moments. Everyone, I wish that you will be ready to release your powers at a moment's notice, but only as a last resort. Our power will only provoke them while we're in front of the millions of troops."

Xiu Si was apprehensive. "Zhang Gong, does it mean that you're going to use...."

I nodded. "We don't have any alternatives, but to use that plan. Even though our powers aren't sufficient, we should still be a threat to them." After hearing that I would be using our trump card, everyone's expression became grave, but no one objected.

The prince and Shan Yun walked in at this moment. We hastily got out from our seats for them to take a seat.

I consoled the prince, "Uncle, you don't have to be anxious. This matter might not be as bad as we imagine it to be. I also want to have a look as to what Ke Zha will be trying when he comes tomorrow. I don't believe that he'll stake the lives of numerous army troops' from the two kingdoms."

The prince nodded. "Zhang Gong, if they are against you, I'll send Shan Yun to follow you. Once something seems abnormal, you're to immediately leave the fort by the eastern entrance. We won't need to be afraid that we won't have firewood to burn, as long as you live. It's crucial for you to preserve your powers as much as possible."

I thought, 'Ke Zha definitely won't negotiate readily. Otherwise, it'll be

unnecessary for him to ally with the Kingdom of Dalu. He must have a motive in doing that, but we are still unaware of what it is now. Uncle Ke Zha that I once knew, what are you planning to do?' I also thought of my best Brother Ma Ke and Hai Shui as I thought about Ke Zha. I don't know if they will come as well.

Ke Zha had unexpectedly brought the two mage regiments along with him. My mood sank, he didn't look as though he had come to negotiate.

Ke Zha first met up with Marshall Feng Hao and Dun Yu Xi before they met up with the prince and us after discussing for a whole two hours period of time.

Ma Ke was astonishingly here. He was extremely excited as he saw us enter. He pushed through the crowd to embrace my shoulders. "Boss, boss, you're still alive! That's great, I've missed you to death." Ma Ke's feelings touched my heart, but my mood mustn't fluctuate now as there was still too many important matters for me to get down to.

I gently pushed Ma Ke away. "Brother, let's reminisce later as I've got some important matters that I need to discuss with His Majesty Ke Zha. Is that alright?"

Ma Ke nodded with reddened eyes as he went back to his seat.

Ke Zha looked as though nothing had happened before as he personally walked in front of me. He patted on my shoulder as he said, "Zhang Gong, it's great to see you again. How have you been?"

I replied indifferently, “I won’t die anytime soon thanks to your blessings.” I was frightened as I thought about it, he was actually able to treat me as though nothing had happened before. He was too frightening.

“I heard that you’re a God’s inheritor now. It’s a fortune to our Aixia. It was all just a misunderstanding what happened before. I’ve already withdrew my previous orders so you’re still a citizen in my Kingdom of Aixia.” He was using his status to suppress me.

“I thank you for that. May I know what is your purpose in coming to the front line?”

Ke Zha smiled. “It’s definitely for the negotiation. Since you, the God’s envoys, have appeared, what other plans will I have? Negotiating is also beneficial to both sides. Only I don’t know when I’ll be able to see the commander of the Demon race to discuss the details of the treaty.”

Mu Zi stood up and said, “My greetings to you Emperor Ke Zha. Currently, I am the one that holds the full authority over the Demon-Beast alliance to enter into a negotiation with you. You can freely state what requests you have for the negotiation.”

Ke Zha replied, “Oh, Mu Zi, it’s really great that you are the representative. What is your suggestion for how both sides should unite?”

Mu Zi replied, “Since it’s a cooperation, both sides have to show sincerity. First, both sides should withdraw half of our troops from the frontline and sign a peace treaty stating that we won’t battle against each other for next three years. In order to express our sincerity, we won’t need any repercussions this time.” The Demon-Beast alliance held the

advantage during the current battle. They could totally suggest for reimbursement during negotiations.

Ke Zha smiled. “In that case, you’ve already made quite a bit of concessions. I don’t have any requests nor terms. We shall accept everything that you’ve suggested. Since the God’s inheritor said that the threat of the Monster race is imminent, we should conclude our negotiation as soon as possible. How is that? Alright, let’s arrange the ceremony for the peace treaty three days from now.”

Emperor Ke Zha’s attitude had stunned all of us. We really didn’t expect him to freely agree to the negotiation. He also didn’t make things hard for us. I originally thought that he would make a fuss about my identity. Who would know that not only did he pardoned my crimes, he also treated it as though nothing had happened between us.

Ke Zha saw that we didn’t believe him so he continued to say, “It can’t be that everyone doesn’t trust me, right? I’ll personally attend the ceremony that is in three days time and will only bring a few guards along with me. It should be fine, right? I need to put my safety into consideration after all.”

## Chapter 31: Peace Talks? Conspiracy?

I nodded. "Since all three kingdoms agreed in negotiating, the future matters will be easy. We've already notified the Demon-Beast alliance. It makes me extremely elated that Your Majesty was able to consider the bigger picture. My thanks to you for that." I bowed deeply to Ke Za after saying that.

Ke Zha stopped me from continuing to bow towards him before replying, "Zhang Gong, it was Uncle's fault in misunderstanding you previously. Can you forgive me for what I've done? I really regret it. You're the most talented genius in the new generation of the Kingdom of Aixia. After these matters are over, I hope that you'll return to Aixia. Principal Di and Principal Zhen really miss you. I've temporarily passed the management of the Kingdom of Aixia to them now. Honestly, I'm already sick of staying in the palace. I've taken this opportunity this time to sneak out."

I was really doubtful of his dubious words and I, who had been tricked by him before, wouldn't be that easily convinced by what he said. I respectfully replied, "We'll discuss about the matters about returning to Aixia after everything has concluded. Since Your Majesty has agreed in negotiating, we shall leave first. If you have any queries, you can dispatch people to the Prince's interim manor to find me. We'll leave now."

Ke Zha smiled. "Alright, it'll be you youngsters era from now on. I've aged. Aixia will be passed to Ma Ke in the future. I hope that you'll support him."

"I will. I shall bid my farewells to Your Majesty now."

Ke Zha said, "Ma Ke, you should see Zhang Gong and the rest off. It has been such a long time since you last seen each other. You must have lots of things that you want to say to each other."

Ma Ke excitedly received the order and followed us out of the commander's division.

"Zhang Gong, are you really disfigured?"

I smiled wryly as I took down the conical hat. “Can this still be fake? They should have already told you what happened to me, right?”

Ma Ke nodded. “Boss, you’ve suffered. However, you’re really able to get Mu Zi back. It’s worth it then.”

I embraced Mu Zi’s slender waist. “That’s right, it’s worth it. How is Hai Yue and you fairing?”

Ma Ke flushed red as he replied, “We’re doing well as we are already engaged. We’ll marry each other after we graduate from the Royal Advance Magic Academy in the future.”

I smiled. “Won’t Hai Yue be the Crown Prince’s imperial concubine then?”

Ma Ke glanced at Mu Zi before whispering, “Hai Shui has been bitterly thinking about you. She’s completely different from who she was before. We can no longer see that lively Hai Shui anymore.”

My heart hurt. “What happen to her?”

Ma Ke complained, “It’s due to missing you. Currently, she has been anticipating when you will come to get her everyday. Hai Yue had said that when I meet you, I must make you account for her sister.”

Mu Zi moved out from the side and said, “Don’t worry, Zhan Gong won’t let Hai Shui down. After everything here is over, I’ll head back with him to get Sister Hai Shui.”

I tightly grasped her hand. “Thank you, Mu Zi.”

Mu Zi replied, displeased, “What’s there to thank me about? I’ll be fine as long as you don’t forget what I’ve told you before. Ma Ke, your father won’t have any conspiracy to harm Zhang Gong this time, right?”

Ma Ke sighed. “Boss, I really don’t know what to say about what happened previously....”

I patted his shoulder. “There’s nothing to comment on. Your father wasn’t in the wrong as a ruler. Moreover, I’m the only one involved in that matter. But the current matter is different as the negotiation is extremely

important. I hope that there will be no mishaps this time as this concerns the world. Do you understand?"

Ma Ke nodded. "Father didn't tell me anything during this trip, but he still brought two mage army troops along. He'll definitely do something. It's better for you to be careful. I'm also don't completely understand my father's temper. Boss, I really hope that nothing dangerous happens to you. I'll feel my father out after heading back."

"Thank you, my brother. Let's bid our farewells here. We'll still be able to see each other again in the future."

"Boss, I'll send you here. Please take care."

"You too."

.....

Interim prince's manor

"Big Brother Xiu Si, how much sincerity do you think Ke Zha has this time? I unknowingly feel an ominous feeling after he agreed to negotiate."

Xiu Si smiled. "Since Ke Zha was able to inherit the throne as a prince, it proved that he's not simple. Even though we don't know what he's thinking, he has agreed to negotiate. Even if it's a conspiracy, we'll just follow him through. How about this? Brother Ke, I'll have to trouble you to notify the Demon-Beast alliance about the peace talks in three days time. Similarly, they are to also maintain a complete defensive formation during the negotiation as a defensive measure against both sides."

After hearing what Xiu Si said, my eyes brightened as I had gotten what he meant. "You're to say that Ke Zha will be raiding the Demon-Beast alliance."

Xiu Si nodded. "Since they have brought so many mages, it's the proof that they will make a move. It's impossible for them to fight against each other when they make their move. Their opponent is only the Demon-Beast alliance. During the negotiation, it'll be the most opportune time for their opponent to relax. Judging from Ke Zha's mind set, he will definitely not let such a good opportunity slip away."

I continued from what he said, “He definitely will have picked a direction and location for the surprise attack. It will be almost impossible for them to attack from the rear as there are plateaus behind the troops. When we negotiate, we’ll be at the center of the two opposing forces so they definitely won’t direct assault the allied Demon and Beast races. Moreover, direct assault will no longer be a raid so there’s only two possibilities left. Is my guess correct, Big Brother Xiu Si?”

Xiu Si smiled and nodded. “It’ll be up to you to make arrangements, now that you understand the situation.”

This guy, he really shirks his responsibilities quickly. However, I didn’t have time to play around blaming him as we were racing against it.

“With Brother Ke’s wisdom, he should know what to do to defend against those two possibilities. You are to command the allied troops, while the Guard Battalion will be divided into two groups in our tactics. One of them is to conceal themselves on both sides of the Ström Fortress. They should be able to sneak out of the city with their cultivation and it must be under the condition that no one finds out when they are heading to the ambush location. Once the human troops shows signs of attacking the allied troops, the mission of the Guard Battalion is to delay their advancement. The other group will be under Big Brother Xiu Si’s command. ‘Hehe! I’ll give you some trouble.’ The remaining people here will have another mission. Jian Shan, you are now to bring 11 brothers with you to scout out the deployment of the army at the Ström Fortress. I need you have to immediately report to me when there is a change in the situation.”

## Chapter 32: Signing the Pact

Dong Ri smiled. “We’ll only need to delay them for a while. The remaining task will be to see how useful the magic spell that the God King has given us will be.”

Xiu Si laughed brightly. “Alright, it’s decided then. I’ll now be a foot soldier for our first God’s envoy to arrange for our manpower. The rest should start doing their tasks as well. We must complete our preparations in the shortest time possible. I really hope that our worries are for naught. After succeeding in the negotiation, everyone should head back home to our base. Zhang Gong, I’ll give you a surprise when you return to the base.”

I was stunned. “Surprise? What surprise?”

Xiu Si smiled. “It’s a secret now. You’ll find that out once you head back.”

.....

My mood was increasingly getting heavier as I heard the continuous flow of intel from Jian Shan. From the news that he conveyed, ever since Ke Zha came to the Ström Fortress, the three Kingdom’s army troop has subdivided again. The other two kingdom’s troops, excluding the soldiers from Xiuda, had been carrying out covert operations every night. They had used patrolling as an excuse majority of the time, but each night the number of people that returned decreased significantly. It seemed that our guess was right. Ke Zha was plotting a conspiracy. If we aren’t able to deter the Ke Zha’s forces with our trump card, then the negotiation this time would be a disaster. We couldn’t count on the troops from Xiuda as it was already gracious enough for the prince to decide that his subordinates would be on the neutral side. Currently, we could only depend on ourselves. Ke Zha, I definitely won’t let you succeed.

Three days passed in a jiffy. The time for the reconciliation was nearing. Everyone that was gathered in my room had grave expressions.

Xiu Si said, “Our people have already reached their appointed locations

and are ready to move at any time.”

Zhan Hu said, “Our preparations are already done. When will we set out?”

I told Jian Shan, “If there’s any problems that occur later, we’ll use a major magic spell. After the spell starts, you’re to immediately retreat with Mu Zi to the Demon race’s side. The few of us will be extremely weak after the spell ends. We’ll depend on you at that time. The twelve of you to us is conveniently 2:1 so two of you will take care of one of us after the spell ends by inserting battle spirits into our body. Your task will be the crucial point as to if the negotiation this time succeeds or not.”

Jian Shan nodded. “Rest assured, Zhang Gong. We’ll definitely support you with everyone’s power to succeed in the task.”

I turned to Mu Zi. “Once Ke Zha goes back on his words, Jian Shan and the others will protect you. Go to the allied armies, you must control the situation at that side well and prevent the allied armies from attacking. Otherwise, what we have done till now will be ruined.”

Mu Zi seriously nodded.

“We must succeed.”

Everyone shouted in harmony, “Success!”

“Set out.” The 19 of us moved to the location for the negotiation.

The atmosphere today was a little heavy. There were thick and heavy clouds in the sky, making everyone feel exceptionally hot and stuffy. The various Kingdom’s army troops’ flags were fluttering at the Ström Fortress. Ke Zha had brought only 20 guards with him. Ma Ke didn’t seem to be in the camp as we went forth.

The Ström Fortress was a boundless flat plain. We were able to see the large portion of army troops stationed at the far west of the fort. In the center, between the Ström Fortress and the Demon-Beast alliance, was a large open plain and it seemed that the location of the negotiation is at the very center. The Beamon King was already waiting for us there.

Ke Zha, who was riding with me on the way, said, “Zhang Gong, it seems that there will be a heavy storm today.”

I touched my conical hat and replied calmly, “What will rain be to us? Let the tempest come freely.”

Ke Zha’s expression changed slightly.

A gale blew past, swirling the sand from the ground, obstructing our sight in a short moment.

After the sandstorm passed, Ke Zha whispered to me, “Zhang Gong, if you’re willing to swear your loyalty to me, your future path will be smooth. I’ll support you unconditionally with all of my capabilities.”

‘You want me to work for you? He must have thought about the power of our base possesses. Hmph! Don’t even think about it.’ “Can we discuss about this after the negotiation concludes, Your Majesty?”

Ke Zha sighed heavily and with a kick from both of his legs on the horse’s abdomen, he went to the front. I knew that the last opportunity to reconcile with Ke Zha was gone. We would just have to depend on our capabilities in a while.

The setup for the negotiation venue was extremely simple. It was just a large stage manufactured by wood that had a large table and ten chairs on it. The Beamon King brought ten Beamon giant beast’s soldiers with him. When I saw his enormous build pacing back and forth on the stage, I was really worried that if he wasn’t careful, the newly built stage would break down.

The Beamon King’s expression was unflustered. When he looked at Ke Zha and the rest of us, he calmly said, “You’ve arrived. Welcome here.”

Mu Zi represented the Demon race. She and the Beamon King sat on the left side of the table, while Ke Zha, Marshall Feng Hao and the prince sat on the left.

The rest of us just sat at the side, watching on how they would sign the treaty.

Ke Zha smiled. "I'm the Emperor Ke Zha Ao Er from the Kingdom of Aixia. I will be representing the human race. We should commence the negotiation now."

I stood up and walked to the other side of the table. The two sides of the table showed the both sides that were going to negotiate. I said clearly, "The Human race, Demon and Beast races has been fighting continuously since the olden times. It has led to great loss to everyone. That phenomenon seems to have stopped after nearly 200 years of time. The three races will have different rates of development with peaceful means. This will let us know that we can only flourish when we are in peace and harmony. Thus, for the negotiation to succeed, I hope that the negotiator of both sides will strictly follow to the content of the treaty. We'll use all of our strength to fight together against our common enemy, the Monster race during the effective period of the treaty. I'll now read the contents of the treaty.

First, the reconciliation will be under the basis that it's fair and well spread. The both parties will have the right to express their opinions and suggestions before signing the treaty.

Secondly, once the treaty has been signed, the both parties have to simultaneously withdraw their armies and are forbidden to carry out any offensive attack towards the other party. However, the remaining army forces can be used to supervise.

Finally, both parties can't assault the other party within the three years after the treaty has been signed.

One side of the treaty includes the Demon and Beast races. The other is made up of the three human kingdoms; Dalu, Aixia, and Xiuda.

The notary of this treaty will be God's Envoy, Zhang Gong Wei.

This will be the conclusion of the pact. I don't know if both sides have any conditions to add on."

## Chapter 33: The Expected Attack

Mu Zi said, “Our Demon-Beast alliance doesn’t have any conditions to add.”

Ke Zha smilingly stood up. “You don’t have any conditions? But I have some.”

I raised my hand. “Please state your conditions, Your Majesty.”

Ke Zha’s expression changed. “My terms are for you, the Demon-Beast alliance, to surrender to us and offer tribute to us year after year for the years to come. If you were to do that, I’ll sign this pact with you.”

Mu Zi rebuked fumingly, “I knew that you’ve ill intentions and didn’t have any sincerity in this.”

Ke Zha sneered. “Did you really think I’ll obediently follow, just by you few little children? How can that be?” Upon saying that, he raised his hand and shot a fireball into the sky. Even though Ke Zha’s magic couldn’t be compared to the few teachers, he wasn’t a weakling. The simple fireball in his hand expanded to become exceptionally large and abnormal.

I knew that he was signalling his forces.

Beamon King roared angrily as he smashed his enormous wolf tooth club towards Ke Zha. Ke Zha chuckled disdainfully. He extended his hand across his chest, resulting to enormous magic hexagons to appear under his, Feng Hao’s and the prince’s feet. After a light shone, they simultaneously vanished from our sight. This should be their premade short-range teleportation scroll. Consecutively, the dusk sky suddenly lit up by the human’s two mage unions as numerous magic spells were shot into the sky towards the allied Demon and Beast armies.

I said apprehensively, “Everyone, prepare to make our move. It’s time for us to release the signal, Big Brother Xiu Si.” Upon saying that, I waved Sukrad’s staff in my hand, hastily casting two protective light screens at the two portions of magic rain in the sky. I definitely wasn’t arrogant enough to think that my magic could resist against the numerous mages

from the human race. My purpose was only to deviate their spells' trajectory.

Xiu Si made his move simultaneously when I did mine as he took out his Sky God's horn and played it, making a long humming sound to sound in the sky.

While we were starting to adapt to the situation, numerous humans surged out unknowingly from both sides of the fort as though they were two sharp arrows heading towards the allied Demon and Beast races. 'Ke Zha, you are really ruthless. You really think to take advantage of this time to attack the Demon-Beast alliance?'

The human's soldiers were arranged in an orderly fashion. The majority of them were light and heavy cavalries as they moved fast as lighting when they headed towards the Demon-Beast alliance in a pincer attack. The first group of the Guardian Battalion had appeared at this moment. About 100 of them moved like lightning to obstruct the frontline of the human's army. Even though the momentum of the cavalry was powerful, the members from the first company of the Guardian Battalion were elites among the elites. Every one of them were comparable to a general from the human race. Their motive was to delay the human race's troops to help gain extra time for us.

The both opposing parties collided against each other in a short period of time. The weapons that the first division of the Guard Squad held was a coarse and long club. They managed to forcefully stopped the human race's advancement by continuously brandishing their weapons. The horses in the frontline fell over after being hit by the club, instantly making the soldiers from behind to fall. I sighed inwardly as it seemed that some casualties were unavoidable.

The Demon and Beast races' soldier started to be mobilised as they moved towards the both side as a preparation to face the attack from the human race. If Ke Zha was smart, he should understand that he wouldn't have any advantage over us now.

I glanced at Mu Zi. "Let's resist against them together, in order to avoid

further casualties and bring real peace and harmony into the world. Let's begin." Upon saying that, I gently raised Sukrad's staff in my hand, instantly summoning wind elements towards my body to elevate from the ground. Everyone followed my lead to soar towards the sky. I glanced at Zhan Hu, Dong Ri, Xiu Si, Gao De, Xin Ao, who had already taken out their individual divine instruments. I took in a deep breath and said, "Let's start."

The light ray of the War God's armour flowed throughout Zhan Hu's body. He nodded towards me and hollered, "The God King bestowed upon me the War God's armor. No evil shall pass me for I shall obstruct the evil demons." As he chanted, the blue light covering his body intensified. The divine aura, carrying a War God's fighting intention, that permeated in the air.

Xiu Si raised the white horn in his hand and chanted, "The God King bestowed upon me the Sky God's horn. My horn's roar will pierce through the nine heavens." A gentle light ray was instantly emitted from the Sky God's horn; the light ray enclosed Xiu Si's body from the top to the bottom of his body. The white light ray turned into a light ball, which was as dazzling as the blue light being emitted from Zhan Hu's body.

Xin Ao gripped the handle of the Titan God's hammer with both of his hands as he raised it over his head and chanted resolutely, "The God King bestowed upon me the Titan God's hammer. I will shake the heavens and move the earth to protect the righteous path." A yellow light ray was emitted from the Titan God's hammer, which was completely different from before as it acted in concert with Xin Ao's powerful grandeur.

Gao De extended his right hand and the Lightning God's shield enlarged, giving off an eye piercing red light ray. Gao De chanted, "The God King bestowed upon me the Lightning God's shield. Even ten thousand blades shall not stop me." Upon saying that, with his right hand across his chest, the light ray from the Lightning God's shield intensified, giving off a sense of loftiness as though it could resist against ten thousand swords.

After Dong Ri looked at the crowd, he gently drew his Wind God's bow

and gently chanted, “The God King bestowed upon me the Wind God’s bow. My ethereal arrows will flash rapidly and violently.” Green intensified light rays raised from the Wind God’s bow. When Dong Ri imposingly pulled on the bowstring, the Wind God’s bow that was giving off flashing green light ray formed a full moon shape.

The glittering light rays from the five people’s body were blue, white, yellow, red and green respectively. The human’s soldiers and the allied Demon and Beast’s troops attention fell on us due to the tyrannical powers we possessed.

I no longer hesitated at this point. I took in a deep breath before I stretched out both of my hands and chanted, word after word, “The God King bestowed upon me the Radiant Holy Sword. It shall shine with the soaring radiance of the vault of the heavens.” A small silver sword appeared from my chest as I chanted. It gently floated above my head, instantly enveloping me with a silver light ray. A warm power continuously communicated with me and the Holy Sword. The six of us formed six peaks. The six light rays moved again after I completed the chant. The six coloured peaks formed a six coloured magic hexagon.

Divine aura surged out from our hexagon, instantly shooting towards the towards the sky. The six light pillars constantly spiralling as it rose, breaking through the clouds in the sky. As the sunlight shone on our fused powers, I momentarily felt my spirit shake.

## Chapter 34: Symphony of Chanting

Zhan Hu hollered, “I represent the War God!” Powers surged out from his back, forming an indistinctive large orchid colour image at his back. This was how Zhan Hu looked when he represented the War God.

Xiu Si yelled, “I represent the Sky God!” An enormous white phantom appeared on Xiu Si’s back. Even though the phantom wasn’t distinct, we knew that it possessed the recovery powers of the Sky God.

Xin Ao called out, “I represent the Titan God!” A yellow silhouette soared from his back.

Gao De shouted, “I represent the Lightning God!” A red silhouette appeared on his back.

Dong Ri yelled, “I represent the Wind God!” A green silhouette emerged, showing an image that it was pulling on the bowstring in preparation to shoot.

I hollered loudly, “I represent the Radiant God!” A gold silhouette appeared from my back. Six enormous light wings were gently fluttering, constantly gathering numerous light elements towards me.

There was no longer just the six of us in mid air now as we had our phantoms that appeared when we represented the gods. This peculiar sight made all of the soldiers beneath us to stop fighting as they looked at us flabbergasted.

I gravely nodded towards everyone. We then harmoniously chanted, “Great God King, please bestow us your boundless divine blessing in order to merge all of our divine powers into one. In order to uphold justice in the world, to eliminate all sinister beings, and bring peace and harmony to the world—Forbidden Symphony of the Gods’ Awakening” The phantoms behind us raised simultaneously. They halted in mid air for a moment before suddenly charging towards the six spiralling light rays that were heading towards the horizon. The six divine phantoms fused with those lights. I felt that my sight suddenly turned completely white at this moment.

The ray of the six light pillars in the sky instantly intensified after our phantoms fused with it. I felt the rapid draining of my powers from my body being continuously extracted by this enormous light pillar as they rapidly spiralled.

An extraordinary sight occurred. The mages from the human race had just started their second wave of attack, making numerous magnificent light rays to cover the sky once again. However, it wasn't towards the Demon camp this time. Just when the magic spells were in mid air, they gathered towards the pillar at lightning speed, under the powerful attractive power of the enormous light we cast. No spells were able to escape from the attraction force.

The six light pillars spiralled to it's maximum speed before turning into magnificent light rays. Xiu Si and the rest's complexion, excluding mine, had already turn pale white. They were purely using their willpower to support their bodies. I gathered the fusion body in my body with great difficulty before roaring out to frantically brandish the Sukrad's staff to draw a gold hexagon in the sky, which was constantly giving off light rays. This was the final step of the spell to allow the Symphony's power to display its might.

Using my will power, I urged the magic formation into the pillar of light. The attractive forces increased so much that I was abruptly pulled up into the light pillar. I felt that I was already reaching the end in casting the forbidden spell. I used all of my powers to float myself back downwards. It felt like there was a force behind me that seemed to have the power to destroy the heavens and earth.

The initial gloomy clouds were completely influenced by the six rays of light to metamorphose into prismatic multicolored clouds.

I unhesitantly followed the plan previously made to directly charge towards the ground in preparation being received by the 12 Guard Squad, who were already soaring into the sky. Ke Lun Duo already brought Mu Zi, the Beamon King and the rest to retreat to the camp of the allied Demon and Beast armies long ago. I currently didn't have the energy to think and just continued to follow what I had planned previously.

I brandished the Sukrad's staff backwards when I was nearing the ground to make my body fly inclined. Even though my body was moving, my mind was still on the forbidden spell. I controlled the powers to violently hit towards the ground as that was all I could do with my current strength. The power of the forbidden spell was really too much to handle. I couldn't command it to do anything further.

The forbidden spell successfully charged towards the ground quickly trailed by the prismatic clouds. Controlling such power made me feel as though a centuries of time had passed, even though it was only for a few blinks of the eye. The clothes on my body were completely drenched in perspiration. I had almost completely used up the remaining powers in my body so I could just support my body to hover.

When the sky recovered its normal state, the sunlight that appeared due to the power pillar was once again covered by gloomy clouds. It seemed as though nothing had happened and was extremely peaceful. On both sides of the battlefield every soldier remained silent. By this time the First Company of the Guard Battalion had secretly retreated already.

Two guards supported my body as they inserted their battle spirit into my body without any restraints. The three gold dans in my body rapidly revolved, making their inserted powers into my own powers. I momentarily felt much comfortable with their assistance. I nodded towards them. "I'm fine already. I can support myself." Only then, the two guards released their hold on me.

My heart suddenly leapt, just as I wanted to head towards Zhan Hu and the rest's side to see the might of the forbidden spell, the ground started to violently quake without any warning. It was coming! The Forbidden spell of forbidden spells—Forbidden Symphony of the Gods' Awakening was going to display its might. I anxiously hovered in the sky as I looked downwards, waiting for a historical moment to occur. This was the first time that we used this move. I definitely wanted to see the outcome from using it.

The ground increasingly quaked so violently that the entire land started to sway irregularly. I inserted power into my voice as I shouted, "To all

soldiers from the humans and the Demon-Beast alliance, retreat immediately!"

Nobody was willing to listen to their commander's order at this moment. The Demon-Beast alliance armies were slightly better as they were further away from the center of the earthquake. The human soldiers were panicking, but they seemed to have listened to my command as they dashed towards the Ström Fortress with all their might.

The quaking of the ground was still increasingly violently that even the Ström Fortress seemed to be affected by it.

I suddenly felt an enormous fluctuation of powers from the ground. "This isn't good!" I hastily called for Zhan Hu and the rest to immediately fly towards the Ström Fortress.

# Chapter 35: The Forbidden Spell Explodes Forth

Before we had even flown a kilometer away, there came a loud rumbling sound that reverberated from behind us. ‘Hong! Hong! Hong!’ A absolutely violent power surged from our backs. There wasn’t any possibility to resist against it so we were pushed forward three times our initial speed by the shockwave. I didn’t dare resist against it, but instead cast a boundary to enclose everyone within to freely move along with the force in moving forward. The impact of the power was too strong. The boundary that I cast constantly vibrated, making me to spit a mouthful of blood. It was only when we were reaching the Ström Fortress that the power behind us weaken.

I stopped my movement and turned back to have a look. The sight before me momentarily made me stupefied.

Was this our doing? The sight before us was a really spectacular. Six light rays constantly emitted from the area that the forbidden spell had hit. The entire sky was covered with dust and rocks. The ground had completely fissured and was still caving in reaching a kilometer radius from the explosion. It cut across the entire flat plain until it reached passed both sides of the distant mountains. There were even a few enormous fissures rapidly heading towards Ström Fortress.

The sky and land were filled with concentrated magic elements, dust and stones. The earth constantly quaked, while the magic elements in the air continuously warped. If we had stayed at our previous spot, we would definitely be engulfed by the limitless divine power. There was a 10 Km radius that was filled with deadly atmosphere. The few human soldiers that were slower had completely disappeared under the devastating power. The biggest fissure was passing beneath our feet towards the city walls of Ström Fortress. The fissure was still a couple meters wide even when its quaking power had already drastically weakened.

There were continuous loud calls for mages at the fort. However, I knew that there wouldn’t be any magic that could be used until the might of the ultimate forbidden spell ended. The sight before us could no longer

use terrifying to describe the scene. We were shocked by the power that could devastate the heavens and the earth. I constantly thought, 'Have I overdone it? I've taken at least a thousand of lives for this negotiation to succeed. Moreover, it's the ultimate power that we activated was the cause in taking so much lives.' I took a deep breath to calm down. I couldn't worry too much for their sake so more people would be able to survive after the imminent battle against the Monster race.

There was a loud sound that came from the back of the Ström Fortress. As my thoughts was constantly turning, I was stunned when I turned around to find that the world's most secure fort's city walls had unexpectedly collapsed. The main culprit in that was the enormous fissure that was beneath our feet. The fissure had already stopped expanding. Its end was beneath the city wall of the Ström Fortress .

The sky was covered with yellow dust and soil, making our sight fuzzy. It was impossible to see the specifics of the current situation. I felt that the power of the forbidden spell was gradually getting weaker. It would disappear shortly. The agitation of the magic elements didn't disappear after the forbidden spell disappeared. It was impossible to absorb them with my capabilities as all of the fusion powers in my body had been converted to battle spirit so that I could forcefully sustain my body. My cultivation was the strongest among the group, but I had consumed the most power when activating the forbidden spell. My body was already extremely feeble. But I knew clearly that I couldn't fall now as I hadn't accomplished what I needed to do.

I hadn't made my move as it wasn't the right moment yet. I calmly watched on as the dust and soil that was blocking out the sun until the dust clouds dissipated. It took half an hour's time for them to completely dissipate and for our sight to gradually clear up. Not a single sound could be heard from the million people from the Ström Fortress or the Demon-Beast alliance within that half an hour.

The scene before me was more appalling than I thought it would be. There was an enormous kilometer wide gulf that linked both sides of the plain. There were numerous smaller fissures from both sides of the gulf.

The longest fissure was the enormous fissure that had just destroyed one fifth of the city's walls. As steam constantly poured out from the mouth of the gulf I had everybody hold their positions. I headed to the gulf alone before circulating the powers in my body to absorb the gradually calming magic elements.

I was once again shocked after reaching the border of the gulf. The depth of the gulf was indeterminable. When I looked down, I could only see a red line at the far bottom that my sight could see. The surrounding air turned burning hot. I took in a cold breath as I suddenly understood what that red line meant. It was lava! It was lava from volcanoes! If it were to erupt, I couldn't and didn't dare to imagine the outcome. However, the depth was bottomless so it should be extremely difficult for it to come up to the land.

I flew back to the crowd as it wasn't the time to consider this problem. I eye signaled to everyone before I forcefully circulated my three gold dans that were now much weaker, making my body emit a weak golden light as I took the lead to fly towards the Ström Fortress.

As we neared the broken city walls, I could see Ke Zha, Ma Ke, the commanders from Dalu and Xiuda, and the high ranking officers from the three kingdoms as they looked forth dumbstruck at the city wall.

I recovered my breath and under the assistant of my magic, I said coldly, "Emperor Ke Zha, are you aware of your crimes?"

Ke Zha's body shuddered and when he raised his head to look at me, his eyes were filled with terror. It was beyond his expectation that we could create what we had just done.

I didn't wait for Ke Zha to reply as I continued, "It's God's intention for the three human kingdoms, the Demon race, and the Beast race to reconcile. However, you almost caused a catastrophe to occur due to personal gain and clearly thought nothing about the current circumstances. What everyone just saw was the Gods' power. We can freely use divine powers as their envoys to accomplish any favorable outcome for the world. If you continue to obstinately persist in going

about things the wrong way, I'll reactivate the divine power. Perhaps, you think that the Ström Fortress is safe, but if I were to use the previous forbidden spell here, you should know the outcome. The Gods are merciful and just gave you a warning. I want your decision now. It's your choice on whether to reconcile or perish."

## Chapter 36: Successful Peace Talks

The officers and all the soldiers on the city wall had dropped their weapons, making continuous metal clangs were heard and the floor was filled with weapons. It was unknown as to who started it, but all of the officers and soldiers knelt and bowed with joined hands at forehead level towards the sky. It was the soldiers that took the lead before Marshall Feng Hao, Zhan Hu's father and even the prince of the Kingdom of Xiuda knelt. Ma Ke whispered something to his father. After whispering, he also knelt, leaving only Ke Zha that remained standing.

Ke Zha's complex was pale and expressed that he didn't believe what had happened. He let out a long sigh after a long time. "Let's forget it. God's plans supersede my own! Ma Ke, you'll be in charge as the representative of the Kingdom of Aixia." After throwing those words, Ke Zha turned and descended from the city wall.

I knew that he definitely won't stir up havoc after today as I looked at his fading back. Ke Zha was a gifted and formidable person. But he was only a person after all. It was impossible for him to resist God's power.

I sighed as I couldn't take everything into consideration. "Since the three human kingdoms wishes to reconcile, I'll represent the Gods to trust you once more. I'll let the representatives of the Demon and Beast races join us and discuss the details for the peace treaty. Currently, you're to first settle with the aftermath." Upon saying that, I eye signaled everyone before turning around and flew towards the Demon-Beast alliance armies. I had constantly consumed the remaining specks of powers in my body for another long period of time so it was already near the state of it being fully used up. I needed to rest soon.

We surveyed the outcome as we flew across the large crevice generated due to the forbidden spell among all forbidden spells, *Forbidden Symphony of the Gods' Awakening* *God's Symphony*. After letting out a sigh, I increased my speed as I headed towards the Demon-Beast alliance camp.

Mu Zi, Ke Lun Duo and Demon King Xiu Yu were waiting for us at the

entrance of the camp. The armies from the Demon and Beast races also knelt towards us just like the humans when we arrived at the entrance. While we emitted peculiar light rays from our body, the shock that we brought with us had conquered the hearts of all three races.

Mu Zi ran to my front. I slightly let out a breath after seeing her before I momentarily felt as though the sky was spinning and the earth was round. But I knew that I currently couldn't topple over now. Otherwise, all of the hard work until now would be wasted. I nodded towards her. "Everything has been going smoothly. We shall discuss further after entering your camp." I saw that Zhan Hu and the rest's complexion were dull as I turned to look at them.

I took the lead to strut into the Demon camp, with everyone following me. I was bitterly enduring the successive waves of exhaustion as we headed quickly towards the camp with great difficulty. When we had finally reached our destination, Zhan Hu, Xiu Si, Xin Ao, Gao De and Dong Ri were the ones to collapse to the ground. Mu Zi hastily supported me as my body started to sway before exclaiming, "Zhang Gong, what's happening to all of you?!"

I smiled wryly. I no longer cared about my image to sit directly on the ground while Mu Zi supported me. "Do you think the God's forbidden spell is easy to use? We have completely used up our powers and need to rest up as soon as possible. I've already settled the human's side. I believe that they won't play any more tricks so I won't be accompanying you when you sign the pact. You should head to the fort now with Big Brother Ke Lun Duo and the Beamon King from the Beast race. You must sign the agreement. I...I have to rest now. "My vision started to blur and couldn't resist against my feebleness and exhaustion as I collapsed on Mu Zi's shoulder as my body slipped into her embrace, I slowly entered my dreams.

.....

The sleep this time was extremely sound. I didn't know how long has passed before I gradually woke up. I used my groggy vision to realise that I was in a tent. This should be at the demon's camp. I propped my body

and felt that my entire body was exceptionally sore. It seemed as though everything was just a dream.

I sat crossed leg before examining the interior of my body. I realised that my powers were still extremely weak, the three gold dans were transparent. I was only slightly better off compared to when I collapsed. The outcome on overusing my power after casting the forbidden spell was really severe, even the astonishing recovery speed of my powers had decreased drastically. I also didn't know how the peace talks went, but I currently couldn't consider that. As I took in deep breath, I gradually prompted the three gold dans to revolve slowly, absorbing the natural magic elements in the surrounding area.

The result in using the forbidden spell didn't damage my meridians, so my gold dans would momentarily recover a little after calmly recuperating them for about a week. My inner body was illuminated by gold light rays again and the warmth from the Holy Sword at my chest could be felt again.

When my mind shifted, I felt someone nearing my side. I hastily circulated the gold dans to their respective locations before awakening. I was looking directly at Mu Zi, whose eyes showed traces of feelings, when I opened my eyes.

"You're awake. You really can sleep!"

I smiled, embarrassed, before replying, "How long have I slept?"

Mu Zi replied, "You've slept for three entire days. Your brothers woke up at about the same time as you did, but they have awakened already. You're alright now, right?" Mu Zi took the initiative to enter my embrace as she talked. I felt slightly intoxicated as I gently embraced her well developed and alluring body.

I leaned my head on Mu Zi's hair, while I closed my eyes, to calmly enjoy this comfortable moment. Mu Zi complained after a long time had passed, "You still haven't replied to my question."

Only then did I woke up as I asked blankly, "What question? Owwwh, stop hitting me. I've remembered. I'm already okay, but my powers still

haven't fully recovered. You don't have to worry about me. That's right, how did the peace talks go? The three human kingdoms shouldn't have played any more tricks, right?"

Mu Zi nodded. "The Kingdom of Dalu and Xiuda originally had intentions to negotiate. Currently, Ma Ke holds the rights in controlling Aixia's mage union so there won't be a problem anymore. You can be rest assured that everything has finished successfully. The Demon and Beast races also won't initiate war against the human race in the future. Actually, there's already a natural protective screen at the center of the three races. The nearly one kilometer wide deep ditch seems to be like a natural moat, how can it be that easy to cross over it?"

## Chapter 37: Relaxed Back

I scratched my head. “I actually didn’t know what was going to happen when I activated the forbidden spell. I initially just wanted to display some divine powers for the three races. Who would have known that the ultimate forbidden spell was so potent? It’s lucky that we haven’t mastered it. Otherwise, the Ström Fortress would have been completely destroyed.”

Mu Zi was stunned as she cried out, “What? You haven’t mastered it? It’s already that amazing without you mastering it? Won’t the world be ruined after you can completely bring out its full power?”

I expressed helplessness with my hand gesture before nodding. “There’s a high possibility for that to occur. The forbidden spell equates to the combination powers of the six of us. Our powers will become increasingly stronger if we improve our capabilities in bringing out the divine powers. When our powers gets stronger, the potency of the awakened powers would also be greater. My Holy Sword is the crux for the forbidden spell. The disparity in the powers I hold to the essential powers required for the spell is large. Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest also hasn’t been able to fully utilise their divine instruments. Thus, from my estimation, the forbidden spell that we cast can’t be beyond 40% of its full potential.”

“Silly girl, don’t be shocked. You have seen the powers of the Monster race. Currently, there’s no trace of the Monster King, but his subordinate that used Demon King Satan’s body already was that powerful. The formidability of the Monster King is really unimaginable. There should be a purpose as to why the God King had passed the task of eliminating the Monster King to us. Moreover, this ultimate forbidden spell is a bane to the Monster King so it should have formidable power.”

Mu Zi snapped out from her shock after a long time. “I really hope that we can eliminate the Monster King so that I can really be with you....” She blushed, but didn’t continue to speak.

I didn’t reply her, but tightened my hold on her body. We had finally accomplished our task. The three great races of the world have finally

united. We only needed to constantly improve our powers from now on. Everything would conclude once the Monster King appears. We didn't have any methods than that, even if it seemed spontaneous. The God King shouldn't know the location for the clone of the Monster King as he currently must be resisting against the sealed body of the Monster King at the God's realm.

After a long time had passed, I said to Mu Zi. "I want you to bring me to see the brothers since they have awoken."

Mu Zi obediently nodded before supporting me as I stood. After warming up my sore muscles, I smiled. "It is already much better. Let's go."

I followed Mu Zi out of the camp with my Sukrad's staff in hand. When the patrolling soldiers saw us, they immediately saluted towards us with reverence expressed from their eyes.

The living quarters of Zhan Hu and the rest were near to mine as after passing a few camps, I had already arrived at the huge camp they were in.

I saw that everyone was present after entering their camp. Ke Lun Duo seemed to be telling them something and everyone was expressing relaxed smiles. They should really loosen up a little after finally accomplishing a huge matter.

"Zhang Gong, you've woke up." Zhan Hu commented.

I smiled and sat beside him. "Big Brother Zhan Hu, are all of you alright?"

Zhan Hu replied with lingering fear, "The forbidden spell is too scary. I felt as though my body had been completely controlled by the War God's armour when we used the spell. I had almost collapsed at that time. It was great for you to make prior arrangements for the Guards to insert their battle spirit into my body. Otherwise, I wouldn't have been able to sustain myself till we reached the Demon-Beast alliance camp."

Dong Ri laughed. "Isn't that the same for all of us? I've already understood what it meant to be a forbidden spell among the forbidden

spells this time. It was so powerful! Seeing how the situation looked that day, what will the Monster King account for? Once we used this God's Symphony spell, we'll be able to annihilate them, even if there were ten thousand armies."

Even though no one spoke, everyone, excluding Xiu Si, expressed approval.

I frowned as I told Dong Ri, "You're wrong."

Dong Ri expressed a stunned expression. "Why?"

I replied gravely, "I admit that the power of the forbidden spell we used is great. However, do you know that I was almost unable to control the power of the forbidden spell? Our current power is still too weak, we can't withstand the power of the forbidden spell and are also incapable in utilising its full power. Do you really think that the Monster King is going to be easy to deal with? If it was easy, the God King wouldn't have been troubled in the first place. The God clan almost faced extinction. Our current powers aren't bad, but how will we fare compared to the God clan? There's definitely a disparity between our powers. What will we be counted for when the God clan had dealt with the Monster race with great difficulty? Thus, we mustn't be blindly optimistic and immediately use as much time as possible to increase our powers. I've already decided that once we return to our base, I'll immediately head towards the God Rended Canyon for the Radiant God's inheritance. All of you should also try to reach the War God's rank."

Dong Ri lowered his head and muttered, unconvinced, "It shouldn't be that bad."

Xiu Si stood up and glanced at me before saying, "No, perhaps it's even much worse than what Zhang Gong had said. What he said is right. We really don't know how strong the Monster race will be. They are in hiding, while we're in the open. We mustn't slack off at the moment in order to accomplish the task that the God King had passed to us."

Big Brother Xiu Si and my thoughts were close. I smiled as I said, "Everyone's cultivation hasn't recovered yet so we'll stay here for a few

more days. We'll set out to head home once everyone's injuries has recovered. You all can just take a break. I still have to make a trip to the Ström Fortress."

I held onto Mu Zi's hand as everybody saw us off as we headed out of the camp. "You come with me to head back. I want to see the situation there and Xiao Jin and Xiao Rou are also still there. I must pick them up."

Mu Zi exclaimed, "Alright! Let's go. Ah! That's right, can you still fly now?"

I smiled wryly. "I'm not that weak. A short flight still won't be a problem for me." Upon saying that, I embraced Mu Zi's waist. The fusion power in my body naturally circulated after I kicked off the ground. We soared in the sky, bringing a faint gold light along with us. We had set out from the Demon-Beast alliance camp towards the Ström Fortress, while Mu Zi screamed in fright."

## Chapter 38: The Stronghold After the Peace Talks

I had noticed that the red-hot lava had already seemed to have dried when we passed the huge gulf on our journey towards the Ström Fortress. It was dark brown in colour and longer steamed. I was relieved after knowing that I hadn't created a major problem. I must really must be cautious whenever I use the forbidden spell.

The city wall of the Ström Fortress in front of us was still breaking apart. It wouldn't be easy to repair it.

Mu Zi leaned into my embrace and clung on my neck. She didn't use any of her powers and just let me to carry her as we flew across. It was fortunate that I had significantly recovered my powers, otherwise it would really be bad if we were to fall into the gulf.

It perhaps might be due to the divine light ray emitted from my body that the people at the fort didn't obstruct us when we neared the fort, giving me an easy descent onto the top of the city.

The guards on duty momentary knelt before me as they said harmoniously, "Greetings to Lord God's envoy."

It seemed that the shock that day was still in effect. I had really became well known this time. When the numerous gazes accidentally fell on Mu Zi, Mu Zi's charming face flushed, burying her head into my embrace and didn't dare to lift her head.

I smiled. "You don't have to be courteous and continuine working." When my body flashed, I had already leaped into the city as I flew over the city wall, bringing Mu Zi along with me.

Mu Zi jumped down from my body. She complained with a flushed face, "You're irritating. Why didn't you put me down in front of that crowd?"

I smiled. "You didn't ask me to let you down. I thought you were comfortable staying in my embrace."

Mu Zi glared at me before saying, "Where are we heading to now? Is it to receive Xiao Jin and Xiao Rou or to meet up with your best brother, Ma

Ke?"

I thought for a moment. "We'll meet up with Ma Ke first. I'm afraid that he will feel uneasy as I had forced Uncle Ke Zha away."

Mu Zi sighed. "You aren't at fault for that matter. You didn't want that to happen, but for the big picture, you had to do that. Let's go."

I pulled on Mu Zi's small hands as I headed towards the fort's Commander division. The soldiers were in a jubilant mood, even when the city wall of the fort had been destroyed. I was no longer in doubt on the peace talk as I saw their looks. I kept my head down and pulled up my shirt as I didn't want to be recognised. Sigh! My scarred covered face was extremely easy to be recognised. Mu Zi seemed to know that I was in a gloomy mood as she clung on my arm. I could feel deep sense of empathy from her gesture. Currently, I was no longer dwelling in the shadows of my heart. I didn't care about anything else, as long as Mu Zi didn't avoid me. If I was to be ugly, then so be it.

We finally reached the commander's division after a short while. It was partially due to the success in the peace talk that there was no longer as many guards. There were only 8 soldiers, wearing the Kingdom of Dalu's uniform, guarding. There were two guards that immediately hindered our path as we neared. One of them said, "Stop! This is a restricted area of the fort. You are forbidden to freely enter it."

I lifted my head and took out the Sukrad's staff from my clothes. I replied, in smiles, "I'm not going to barge in. I want to make a request to meet up with the Prince from the Kingdom of Aixia, His Highness Ma Ke."

That guard was stunned as he instantly recognised me. He said dumbfoundedly, "You...You are....."

I nodded. "That's right, I'm Zhang Gong Wei. I'll have to trouble you to make known my presence. Thank you."

That guard nodded and said, as he bowed to me, "It is unnecessary. Please enter. You're the God's envoy so it's unnecessary to report your comings. Please quickly enter." The guards, who had already recognised

me, moved to the side to allow us to enter.

We could hear them discuss unceasingly as we entered the entrance of the Commander's division."

A soldier said, "He's that God's envoy? The feeling he gives to me is so comfortable, even though his appearance is a little ugly."

Another soldier replied distainly, "Did you know that that God's envoy originally had a handsome appearance? It seemed that it was due to eliminating the Monster's race that resulted to his current look. Did you see that beauty with impeccable look by his side? She should be the princess from the Demon race. If the God's envoy was that ugly by nature, how could the princess follow him?"

Another soldier said, "It might not be true. There's a proverb that beauties love heros. Who can be more heroic than God's envoy, Zhang Gong? If it wasn't for him to make the peace talk successful, we'll have to battle again."

The first soldier that spoke replied, "You make sense. It's really a great feeling that we don't have to fight! Brothers, how about we go for a drink after our shift is over?"

.....

Mu Zi and I looked at each other, expressing smiles of happiness towards each other.

We directly headed to the lounge of the Commander's division. Ma Ke and the rest should be here now. It was as I expected after entering the lounge. Not only Ma Ke was present, Marshall Feng Hao from the Kingdom of Dalu was also here. Only the Lord Prince, Zhan Hu's father, wasn't here.

Feng Hao and Ma Ke simultaneously looked stunned at each other when we entered. Ma Ke momentarily stood up excitedly after seeing us and walked briskly towards us. He hollered, "Why haven't you come after so many days?! Could it be that you don't trust your home country?"

I smiled and shook my head. "How could I? I definitely wouldn't distrust

my best brother, even if I don't trust my home country!"

Ma Ke's eye rims reddened. "It's father's fault previously. He has kept it from me for so long. It was already too late to stop him after knowing his plans in going against what he said. Boss, your powers are really too terrifying. Father will forever be unable to lift his head to govern Aixia after this." Ke Zha was his father after all so Ma Ke's expression momentarily dampened a little.

I asked, "Aixia really cannot go on without a leader. Uncle Ke Zha wouldn't have left just like that right?"

Ma Ke's face flushed as though he was gathering his courage. "Brother, father has passed me a letter before he left. It might be due to our relationship. He wants me to immediately head back to the Kingdom to pass the throne to me after everything here has settled."

## Chapter 39: The Future Emperor

I was elated. “That’s great! I congratulate Your Majesty in advance. Haha!” If Ma Ke was to be the Emperor of Aixia, I no longer need to worry about issues for the three human kingdoms. The Kingdom of Dalu wouldn’t be a threat when the two Kingdoms, Aixia and Xiuda, were on my side.

Ma Ke punched me before saying, “Boss, quit making fun of me.”

Feng Hao perhaps felt uncomfortable with our deep friendship as he cleared his throat twice unnaturally. I turned and bowed towards him. “My apologies, greetings to you, Marshall Feng Hao. Your Kingdom shouldn’t have any issues regarding the peace talks, do they?”

Feng Hao forcefully smiled as he replied, embarrassed, “I previously couldn’t act on my own. I apologise for that, God’s envoy Zhang Gong.”

I smiled. “Those had already passed so it’s unnecessary to mention this. I still have to bother you in cooperating with the three Kingdoms here.”

Feng Hao looked ashamed before he sighed. “You guys can continue to chat. I still have some matters to attend to. I’ll take my leave first.” Upon saying that, he turned to walk out of the Commander’s division.

After seeing him leave, Ma Ke sighed. “Boss, you really have cruelly fixed the three human kingdoms this time. Currently, our soldiers from the Kingdoms of Aixia and Dalu, excluding the Kingdom of Xiuda, can no longer lift their heads. I’ve heard that Marshall Feng Hao had passed a letter of resignation to his higher ups from Dalu in preparation to resign from his duty.”

I was stunned. “It couldn’t be that bad?”

Ma Ke said, displeased, “How can it not be bad? The powers that you displayed that day was too powerful. It’s not something that humans can resist. The three kingdoms are in a hurry to curry some favours from you now. Feng Hao, who had offended you, will naturally be unable to continue holding onto his Marshall’s position.”

I shook my head. “I currently can’t afford to consider so much. I only hope that you’ll strictly follow to the terms of the treaty. I need to leave immediately. I’ll be heading to the God Rended Canyon after settling a few more matters. I must make preparations as soon as possible as the appearance of the Monster King won’t be far off. You should also start to train up the mages right after heading back, especially light mages. When the time comes, you’ll have to adapt to it. Alright?”

Ma Ke nodded. “Boss, do you really have to leave now?”

I replied, “En! Time is pressing so I don’t have a choice. We still have the chances of reuniting again after we eliminate the Monster King. That’s right, Ma Ke, please help me to send my regards to Teacher Di, Teacher Zhen and the few teachers after you head back. I really miss them.” How could I become who I was today without their guidance, especially Teacher Di? That old man had been nurturing me ever since I entered the Royal Intermediate Magic Academy. I really missed him after being separated for so long!

Ma Ke replied, “I will. Boss do you know what I really regret the most in my life until now?”

I asked, stunned, “What is it?”

Ma Ke replied, disappointedly, “I regret that I didn’t join you in searching for the Holy Sword. Not only did I miss those exciting times, it’s also impossible for me to reach your current powers.”

I patted shoulder. “It’s already over so it’s useless to regret. What you need to do now is to become a great king. The future of Aixia lies on your shoulders. Your responsibilities are extremely heavy. You’ll be busy after heading back. However, I believe that the teachers will definitely support you. You’ll definitely be able to walk on with steady steps with the top three mages in the continent supporting you.”

Ma Ke replied resolutely, “I will as it’s my duty. I definitely won’t shirk from it.”

I laughed and replied, “That’s my great brother. Alright, Mu Zi and I will take our leave. You’ve to take care of yourself.”

“Big Brother.....” Ma Ke’s eye rims reddened again.

I turned around and pulled Mu Zi along. “Enough, stop expressing such a girly expression. It’s not like we won’t be seeing each other again.” Upon saying that, I pulled Mu Zi along as I headed out. I heard Ma Ke choked with sobs. “Big Brother, you must take care of yourself as well!”

I forcefully endured my tears from falling and didn’t reply to him as I left the Commander’s division with Mu Zi and dashed towards the prince’s interim manor.

My mood calmed down after leaving the Commander’s division. Mu Zi said gently, “We won’t need to consider so many matters after defeating the Monster King, right? I’ll be able to accompany you in doing what you want to do then. For example, we can gather all of your friends to have a meal.”

Her words made me laugh. “You little girl, really can’t forget about eating!”

Mu Zi chuckled. “Of course! Eating is a natural ability to humans. It’s already been so long since I’ve eaten any delicacies.”

I smiled, “Don’t worry. There’s definitely some good food for you to eat after returning to our base.”

We had arrived at the prince’s manor while we chatted. It was extremely quiet as there was unexpectedly not a single person guarding the place. The sight after entering the entrance made me jump up from shock as I saw Xiao Jin used his front claws to cover his eyes, while he laid on the floor. There was also Xiao Rou, who was in her human form, happily bouncing vivaciously on his back.

Xiao Rou immediately jumped off his back when she saw me. “Master, you’ve returned.”

I smiled. “Didn’t I tell you not to call me Master? You can just call me Zhang Gong. What are you two doing?”

Xiao Jin moved his front claws from his eyes after hearing my voice. He cryingly complained, grieving, “Master, you’re finally back. I’ll have been

tortured to death by the demoness if you had come back any later. She insisted to use me as a bed to jump on. I'm so pitiful.....”

Goodness, it was really Xiao Rou to be able to think using Xiao Jin as a bed. I shifted my gaze at Xiao Rou, who had already hid behind Mu Zi. She muttered, “Don’t blame me. Who told him to seem to have such a texture? It made me want to give it a try. Otherwise, I would have died from boredom!” Mu Zi laughed heartily after hearing what she said.

Mu Zi said, “That’s right! I also just realised that Xiao Jin’s body really seems to have a soft texture. I also want to have a try.” Upon saying that, she kicked off the ground, pulling Xiao Rou along, to leap onto Xiao Jin’s back.

# Volume 11

## Chapter 1: Leaving the Stronghold

Xiao Jin yelled out, while expressing a gaze in hopes of seeking help. “Master please help me!”

I suppressed my laughter and patted his huge head. “Xiao Jin, my good brother, you’ll have to suffer. I can’t control Mu Zi! I can only wish you the best. That’s right, where are the prince, Big Brother Shan Yun and the rest?”

Xiao Rou replied, while playing with Mu Zi. “They have left. They wanted me to pass a message to you saying that since the situation here had been stabilized, they have headed back to train the troops in preparation to fight with the Monster King and that if you needed help, you can go to the Kingdom of Xiuda to find them. An old man also said that he’ll be leaving his son in your care. It’s that fierce guy.”

The prince was in such a rush! I thought, ‘The reason for the prince to leave in such a hurry must be related to why the Aixia and Dalu suddenly became hostile previously. The prince might also have difficulties due to their last minute changes. It’s also good for him to leave as it’ll be awkward for the people of Xiuda and Aixia to interact with him here.’

It must naturally be Zhan Hu when Xiao Rou said that the prince had placed him under my care. I smiled. “You’ve to be careful in what you say. If Zhan Hu were to hear you call his father fierce, he won’t let you off easily. Haha! Mu Zi, that should be enough. You guys should also stop bullying Xiao Jin. We should head back now.”

“Alright! That’s great!” Xiao Rou leaped towards me. She had changed into her squirrel-like form when she neared my body, landing agilely on my shoulder. Mu Zi chuckled after she got down from Xiao Jin’s back as she caressed his enormous head, she said, “Xiao Jin, you won’t get mad at me, right?”

Xiao Jin mouth muscles switched a little before saying, “Of...Of course not. Master, where shall we head to?”

I smiled. “Let’s head back to the Demon-Beast alliance’s camp before returning to the base that you almost destroyed after two days.”

Xiao Jin replied, “Alright, all of you can get onto my back now.”

I embraced Mu Zi’s lovable body before elevating from the ground to land on Xiao Jin’s back. I laughed for a while before saying, “Let’s go, Xiao Jin.” Xiao Jin had brought Mu Zi and I towards the sky by the flapping of his enormous wings and towards the Demon-Beast alliance’s camp.

.....

We stepped on the journey to head back to the base after three days. I realised that nobody among the First Guardian Battalion had died or suffered from severe injuries after checking their condition and numbers. There were only a negligible amount of people that suffered light injuries. It seemed that our First Guardian Battalion’s powers were extraordinary. The Guardian Battalion was entirely made up of Radiant Knights or those that possessed powers nearing the Radiant Knight’s rank, even if there weren’t many of them.

I didn’t let Ke Lun Duo come along with us this time as Mu Zi and I felt awkward with him following around when we were together.

Since the majority of the group couldn’t sustain flight for a long period of time, we decided to head back to the base by foot. Our advancing speed was still extremely fast even if we were travelling by foot. Our base, at the mountain range that intercepts all three kingdoms, was in view after using just a couple of day’s time.

“Haha! We’re almost home. I wonder what changes will have happened of our home after this few months.” Dong Ri commended. Everyone’s mood raised as we saw that we were reaching our base as we had come back after succeeding in what we wanted to achieve after all.

Xin Ao smiled. “There’s definitely going to be changes as our base will have differences in almost every ten days. Perhaps, our number of

brothers has already reached beyond ten thousand already.”

I frowned. “Even though there are plenty of places for us to set a base among the mountain range, how will the plants and animal resources keep up with our demands if the number of us has increased too much? We’re currently always spending after all. What should we do as the wealth that I carry on me will definitely have its limit.”

Xiu Si nodded. “Zhang Gong makes sense, but since the resources in the mountain is abundant, including the crops we grow, we won’t need to worry about our food supply. However, those necessities that are easily used up must still rely on the three kingdoms to restock them as a solution. There’ll definitely be a day when we use up all the food resources if we just consume them from the mountain in the long run.”

Zhan Hu suggested, “We can just ration them and just endure until the Monster King appears.”

I shook my head. “No! We definitely can’t do that.” I looked at Mu Zi nodded in agreement. She seemed to have the same thoughts as I do. I smiled and said, “Mu Zi, explain it to everyone.” Mu Zi was the Demon’s princess after all. I always felt as though there was an estrangement between her and everyone since their interactions with her weren’t long. Thus, I must make everyone to accept her by her performance as she was also one of us. Actually, Mu Zi, who had been undergoing royal education when she was young, was much better than me in strategizing.

Mu Zi smiled at me and said, “What Zhang Gong said is right. We really can’t head down that way. We’ll leave the matters of whether our dwindling resources can sustain us until the Monster King appears and whether we can win against the Monster King aside. Has everyone thought about how shall we retire the brothers that have followed us after everything is over?”

Mu Zi words momentarily made everyone to fall into deep thoughts.

Zhan Hu replied, “The people from the God’s village will be easy as we can just let the few elders bring them back to their village. However, those people that we recruited will be more problematic. We can’t just

tell them to disperse after accomplishing our tasks.”

Gao De replied, “What shall we do then? It can’t be that we have to ask for some money from the three human kingdoms to dismiss them? Those people that are relying on us shouldn’t be in it for money, right?”

Xin Ao replied, “We’ll just disband them since it’s not for money.”

Mu Zi shook her head. “No, we can’t do that as we’ll lose the hearts of the people if we were to do that. We must give them the best way out. Big Brother Gao De had also said previously that those that follow us aren’t always due to money. The majority reason in them following us is due to your God envoy’s identity. I had heard from Zhang Gong regarding the God’s village. Even though our current number of people is a little too much, we can totally establish another God’s village here. Everyone here are experts with strong cultivations. We can even set up a small mercenary team to accomplish easy tasks to earn living expenses.”

## Chapter 2: This Kind of Base

Mu Zi surveyed the crowd and found that everyone's gazes were on her. She continued to say, "We just need to set a limit to how many people we will recruit. It won't be a problem to sustain then. You've been living together for such a long time so there definitely will be feelings towards each other. It'll be the best outcome if everyone could stay together. Of course, if people want to leave after eliminating the Monster King, we'll definitely reward them with some money and send them on their way. We'll follow my plan for those who want to stay to create a new God's village. This is just a draft plan that I thought up after hearing Zhang Gong's words. We'll still need to discuss with everyone on the specifics. I've spoken too much and earned everybody's ridicule." Mu Zi retreated back to my side after saying that.

Zhan Hu laughed. "Younger brother's wife, you don't have to be so courteous and what is there to be ridiculed for? Your plan that you proposed is awesome! I agree with your plans. We'll discuss this matter with the elders after heading back."

Xiu Si smiled. "Mu Zi is worthy of being the Demon race's princess. She's really good at weighing the pros and the cons. Your plan isn't bad so I also agree."

I was secretly happy as I clearly knew that Mu Zi's talk had shortened the distance between everyone and made it easier for them to interact after this. Her thoughts were much more well rounded than mine. I nodded. "Alright, since nobody has any further opinions, we'll go with this plan."

About a dozen of men suddenly appeared before our group, just when we just decided on the future plans for the base. They uniformly bowed. "Greetings to the God's envoys."

I smiled. "We're all brothers. Why are you so courteous then? How is our base now?"

The dozen of them lifted their bodies from their bowing positions. One

of them said, “The base is in good conditions. The patrol team noticed you when you first arrived at the mountain range. The elders have brought a few people to come to receive your return. The matters regarding the God envoys’ display of powers at the Ström Fortress has been spreaded throughout the base. Everyone really admires your power.”

Xiu Si said, “How can we trouble the elders to come receive us? Zhang Gong, let’s quicken our pace.”

I nodded before instructing everyone to quicken our pace. I suddenly thought about something along the way. I asked Xiu Si, “Big Brother Xiu Si, didn’t you mentioned that you’ll give me a surprise after returning to the base? What is it? You can tell me now, right?”

Xiu Si laughed. “I still can’t tell you now. You’ll know after reaching the base.”

“You’re being mysterious! I also want to know what it is now.” Mu Zi commented while staying by my side.

I raised Sukrad’s staff to summon Xiao Jin, who was flying in the air. “Forget it, I’ll find that out soon.”

We were already reaching the base while we chatted. We just need to get over the mountain before us before the home that I had left for so many days would be in view. A 300 men squadron appeared at that mountain peak at this moment. The leader of that group was the five elders from the God’s village. The crowd that were following behind them shouted, “We welcome the Gods’ envoys and brothers’ return.”

We quickly flew to the mountain. It had been quite sometimes since we last met with the few elders. There was some traces of hardships shown on their faces, but their vigor was still as hale and hearty as they smiled heartily when they looked at us.

“Elders, we’ve returned.”

The great elder said, “Zhang Gong, you’ve done perfectly well this time. Ah! Your face has really.....”

I smiled. “Everything has passed. It seems that you know about our

matters extremely detailed!"

The Great elder replied, "Information gathering is crucially important to us. We've set up a hundred men squadron to is specialised in gathering the various informations from the continent. Let's quickly head back to our base."

When the 500 men following us met up with the crowd, the atmosphere momentarily became lifely. Everyone happily went over the mountain to head back to the base.

I received a shock after looking at the base. This was completely different from the slightly worn down village when I left. It looked just like a city and the surrounding mountains formed the city's natural walls. The entire city had been segregated into a few districts. There were densely arranged stone houses on the eastern side , an area filled with crops on the western side of the city, a plain land at the south that had a few hundred people in training and the north side of the city that we were currently heading to. There were currently over one thousand people lined up in an orderly formation.

The great elder said, "The houses made from stone are sturdier and last longer so we've changed to it from the originally wooden houses that were built here. There are now lookout posts located throughout the surrounding mountains. There'll be 300 men constantly patrolling daily. Everyone takes turns to either train or to farm. The base already has its conventional way of operation."

I said emotionally, "Elders, you have really suffered. I didn't expect that the base has already built its foundation in such a short period of time. I heard from Big Brother Xiu Si that our base is 3000 men stronghold when they left. How many are there now?"

The Great Elder smiled. "There's still 3000 of us. It won't be a problem for us to provide for 10,000 people, according to the scale of the base. However, we few elders, have considered that there might be a problem in food shortage if we were to recruit more people, which will affect our fighting strength. Thus, we decided to maintain the number of our forces

to be 3000. Our group will become the main forces resisting the Monster King when it appeared.”

Xiu Si and I smiled at each other. “Elder, we’ve thought about the same thing. Haha! Let’s head back to the base. Big Brother Xiu Si said that there’s a surprise for me. I wonder what that surprise will be.”

With complex gazes, the few elders looked simultaneously at Xiu Si. I suddenly got the feeling that I was being schemed against.

We entered the base under the escort of 2000 people. Everything had been arranged in an orderly manner. The five elders had really put in lots of effort into this base!

We had arranged for a banquet at the large plain area of the base to celebrate our success that night. Everyone, excluding those on duty, was having lots of fun. I had explained the plans that Mu Zi had told us earlier in the day to the elders during the banquet and had gotten their approval. Everything had gone back to its smooth path after the ordeal from going to the Demon race.

The banquet was nearing its end. Since everyone’s cultivation wasn’t weak, they still had a clear mind, even after drinking a lot of alcohol. Xiu Si smiled strangely at me before standing up, “Zhang Gong, I’ll give you the surprise now.”

## Chapter 3: God's Protector Domain

When I surveyed the crowd, I found that everyone, excluding Mu Zi, Zhan Hu and I, seemed to know what Xiu Si was referring to as their gazes uniformly fell on me.

Xiu Si cleared his throat before saying, “We’ve already discussed with the few others when I led the first division Guard Squad to Ström Fortress. We have decided to set a name for our team in order to have a sufficient reason to send troops. The name will be known as the God Protector Domain, which is meant to be guards for the Gods. Our army squadron will officially be changed to God’s Protector Squadron today, since Zhang Gong has returned. Our objective is to help the Gods to eliminate the Monster race to return the world’s peace and harmony.”

Once he finished his piece, everyone instantly cheered.

I asked, stunned, “Big Brother Xiu Si, is that the surprise from you?”

Xiu Si smiled. “Of course it’s not just that. You’ve got to let me finish what I’ve got to say. The five elders will be the supervisors of our God’s Protector Squad to guide everyone’s training and to supervise them. They will be forming the law enforcement division. There will be 6 squadrons from the 3000 of us. The first division squadron is comprised of the brothers that I’ve brought with us. The rest of the brothers have been arranged into their respective divisions already. Since our numbers aren’t much, we’ll not be going to assign a low class commander. The six divisions will be specifically led by Big Brother Zhan Hu, Xin Ao, Gao De, Dong Ri, Jian Shan and I.”

After hearing what he said, I couldn’t bear not to ask, “What will I be doing then?”

Xiu Si sniggered. “You get the surprise. Kingdoms can’t not have a leader and officials can’t lack armies. The one to take our God’s Protector Domain’s leader position will be you. You’ll be in charge of everything.”

I was startled. I knew that he had thought up a conspiracy. It was just as expected. If I were to be the leader, I would be the busiest person in the

group. I hastily stood up to reject. However, my objection was already drowned out by the cheers from the few thousand people. Xiu Si smiled at me with a look that meant 'my crafty plan was successful', which made me break out a cold sweat.

I hastily turned to the five elders for assistance. "Elders, I don't think the leader of the group should be me as I'm young so my knowledge is shallow and I lack fame. What do you think?"

The second elder smiled. "Zhang Gong! Don't decline as we've already discussed this matter. Everyone unanimously accepted you as our leader. How can you be not famous? Who in the world still doesn't know that God's envoy, Child of Light Zhang Gong Wei, is famous for his fighting prowess? Alright, it's finalized then."

Xiu Si went to my side. "How is it? Zhang Gong, my surprise isn't bad, right?"

I smiled wryly. "How is this a surprise? It just shocked me. Big Brother Xiu Si, you've caused me harm." I suddenly thought of a plan. I hollered out, using my dantian, "Everyone, please calm down. I've got some words to say." My voice that incorporated my fusion powers surged towards the horizon, instantly suppressing the clamors at the base.

I smiled. "Since everyone agreed that I should take the leader's position, I won't decline. However, I have still got a matter to announce to the crowd." Upon saying that, my expression became serious, and with a awe-inspiring grandeur, I said, "Everyone shouldn't be too complacent, even though we were victorious this time. We still don't know how much power the Monster race truly possesses, so our path is still as arduous as it was. Thus, I hope that you can bring up your spirit to prepare for any difficulties that would occur. I've decided to head to the location that the God King had mentioned to me to receive the Radiant God's inheritance, and gain more power to resist the Monster King. I don't know how long this trip will take, so I suggest that the base be under the five elder's guidance during my absence. Since I'm impressed by Big Brother Xiu Si's intelligence, he would be the interim leader of the team. I'll probably return when the final battle against the Monster race is about to start."

My words were filled with passion, so it momentarily moved all of the God's Protectors. Everyone was constantly shouting out for the downfall of the Monster King.

Upon saying those words, my serious expression eased. Mu Zi whispered, "Zhang Gong, what you said just now was filled with resolution."

I maintained my current expression and whispered back, "Big Brother Xiu Si wants to harm me? Let's see what he will do now." As expected, Xiu Si's complexion had already paled as he looked at me filled with helplessness.

Everyone went back to rest late at night. Mu Zi and I were standing on a mountain peak beside the base. The trees were gently swaying in the wind, under the moonlight.

"Tomorrow's weather will be good." Mu Zi commented.

I intimately embraced her lovable body. "That's right! It's cloudless."

Mu Zi glanced at me. "Zhang Gong, how are you really going to settle Sister Hai Shui's matter?"

My mood dampened a little when I heard her mention Hai Shui. I had left a letter with Ma Ke to pass it to Hai Shui when we left the Ström Fortress. In the letter, I had told Hai Shui everything that has happened and told her to forget about me as I'm no longer the Zhang Gong that she had known. I really didn't know how to face her with my current look and didn't want her to see my ghastly appearance for her entirely life! Hai Shui's deep feelings for me remained as new to me as if it wasn't for her, I wouldn't have been able to escape from the city

Mu Zi seemed to know that I was desolated, as she said, "Actually, Sister Hai Shui's love for you isn't any lower than mine. She won't mind your looks. Why did you have to....."

I interrupted Mu Zi. "Do you still remember why I wasn't willing for you to follow me initially? It's the same reason for Hai Shui. Even though my feelings for Hai Shui can't be counted as love, I'm really grateful towards

her. How can I harm her with my current looks? Moreover, my heart can't calm down when the Monster King's battle isn't over. Mu Zi, I want you to promise me that if something happens to me during the final battle with the Monster King,.....”

Mu Zi covered my mouth as she fumingly rebuked, “Don't say such pessimistic words. You are God's Envoy so how can you be defeated?”

I smiled wryly and shook my head. “It's hard to say on this matter. You and Hai Shui are both good girls. I wish for your happiness, so if I can't give you, I want you to find your own happiness. Mu Zi promise me that if that really happen, don't miss me, ok?” Mi Jia Lie's words constantly rang in my ears that he wasn't fully confident that I would be able to accept the Radiant God's inheritance. With that on my mind, how could I be certain about my future's fate? I honestly had a lot of things that I couldn't bear to part with, but I must follow through with my responsibilites for the world's peace and harmony.

## Chapter 4: Drifting Away

Tears flowed down from Mu Zi's face. She embraced me tightly and said, choked with tears, "No, nothing can happen to you. Only you can give me happiness. I'll definitely live a bitter and lonely life without you. Zhang Gong, you must stay safe for me."

I kissed gently on her forehead. Mu Zi's unfathomably deep feelings for me greatly shook my heart.

"Mu Zi, please stop crying. I'll definitely do my best. We'll naturally settle the situation with Hai Shui. If we are destined to be together, then nothing will break us apart. I can't currently give her any false hope, but if she is willing to give me a chance after eliminating the Monster race, I'll definitely pursue her. I'll bring you both to roam across the continent then, alright?"

Mu Zi didn't say anything and just silently leaned on my chest. My spirit roused after a gentle breeze blew past. The most important thing that I needed to do now was to quickly receive the Radiant God's inheritance. That way, I would have sufficient power to protect my loved ones. 'God King! The mission that you left me really is too heavy.'

Not only had I spent the following days accompanying the five elders in training the God's Protector Squad, I also spent most of the time with Mu Zi and our friends. It had been a long time since I felt this free and unfettered. I didn't know what would happen when I received the Radiant God's inheritance, but at that time, I was happy. We had almost wandered around the entire mountain range. I didn't mention anything about the Radiant God's inheritance to anyone during this past month as I didn't want them to worry about me, especially Mu Zi. She was really happy these few days and I love seeing her happy. My ugly appearance was still my weak point, so I didn't dare to stand by the river nor look into a mirror.

Forty-six days passed by quickly. I knew that time restraints would no longer allow me to continue having fun. I must do what needed to be done and follow through with my responsibilities.

The sky was still pitch black when I sat on my bed. I had lit up the room with my light illumination spell. I hadn't slept much this night since I had to leave. I specifically stayed by Mu Zi's side yesterday night. It had been such a long time since I had written Mu Zi a love letter. Since I was leaving, I would write a letter for her.

I took out my paper and pen from the space pocket. It took me a long time to focus as I really didn't want to go! The sky was getting brighter when I looked out the window, to see if dawn was arriving. If I continued to dally, I would have to see the reluctance on everyone's faces when I leave and I didn't want their reluctance to influence my indecisive heart. I clenched my teeth and taking out my pen to quickly write a short letter.

I placed the letter under the lamp on the table after folding it. I sighed before tossing all of my personal items into my space pocket. I didn't plan to bring Xiao Jin along this time. If the Monster race were to commence their attack on the various races while I was still receiving the Radiant God's Inheritance, Xiao Jin could substitute for me to help the group.

I carefully withdrew my body's aura as I snuck out of the room with Sukrad's staff in hand.

The security of the God's Protector Domain was very tight. If I were to just fly out, I would definitely be caught by the patrolling soldiers, so I didn't do that. I stealthily climbed up a hill and used my sensitive elemental power to successfully dodge two patrolling squadrons of soldiers. I finally left the God's Protector Domain's perimeters. 'I'm so pitiful as the leader of the Domain, here I am sneaking out like a thief in the night. This feeling is really embarrassing! I really have to go my friends, I apologise for this.' I clenched my teeth as I activated the fusion powers in my body to fly out of the mountain range, staying close to the ground.

.....

The God's Protector Domain awoke as per usual in the morning. The soldiers responsible in farming had already gotten up and were busy tending the fields. The weather today was sunny and clear. It gave a

refreshing feeling to everyone when the sunlight shone onto the ground. The morning temperatures in the mountains was a little low, but it was nothing to the members of the God's Protector Domain.

Mu Zi walked out from her room, yawning. She had chatted with Zhang Gong late into the night yesterday. Recently, she kept feeling that Zhang Gong was a little down, even though he was often by her side. Thus, Mu Zi would spend every possible moment by his side to chat with him.

Knock! Knock! Knock! Mu Zi knocked on Zhang Gong's door. "Zhang Gong, it's me. Have you woken up? The sun has already risen." After getting no response for a long while, since she was already used to Zhang Gong's sleeping habits, Mu Zi said sharply, "You just know how to sleep all day. If you still don't get up, I'll use my water spell to freeze you." Zhang Gong had told Mu Zi how his mother had woken him up before, which had now been learned and applied by Mu Zi, creating the best alarm clock.

Zhang Gong would definitely run to get the door after hearing that Mu Zi was going to use water magic. Mu Zi's magic power was different from his mother's, as she was approaching the Magister level. There was one time where Zhang Gong slept too deeply and didn't hear Mu Zi's calls. He was literally flushed out from the room by her spell. But today was a little strange as she still didn't hear Zhang Gong's voice.

Mu Zi had a bad premonition, so she didn't use her water spell straightaway. She just violently pushed through the door. After seeing that the room was empty on entering, Mu Zi was stunned for a while before her gaze landed on the letter that Zhang Gong had left behind.

Mu Zi already knew what had happened. Her eye rims involuntarily reddened as she reached for the letter with shaky hands and picked it up. Upon opening it and reading it...

\*

Author's note from over 10 years ago:

"Thank you everyone for supporting me. There are many friends that commented that the pace of the book is a little slow. I'll take notice of

that and quicken the pace a little. Child of Light is my first book, after all so there will definitely be some mistakes; I wish for everyone's forgiveness. Some of my friends asked me if the quality of the book would drop if I were to simultaneously write up this novel and Mad God (Kuang Shen). I can definitely give a reply that the quality won't fall as I'm not writing the two books at the same time. I hope that everyone will continue supporting me. Thank you.-TJSS"

## Chapter 5: Hai Shui Arrives

“Mu Zi, when you see this letter, I will already be far from the base. You should understand why I’m heading out. I must go to protect the world’s peace and harmony. I’m sorry for leaving without telling you. I know that you will be hurt after learning of my departure. However, I want to tell you that no matter where I am, you’ll be following me in my heart. I love you, Mu Zi. I really do. Please take care of yourself. I must obtain the Radiant God’s inheritance for everyone, you, and the world. I want you to help everyone resist the Monster race when they appear. We should be able to hold for a while with the strength of our God’s Protector Squad. Please help me tell Big Brother Xiu Si that he will be in charge of everything at the base. I also didn’t take Xiao Jin along with me to receive the inheritance as it will be better for him to stay here to increase our strength. Mu Zi, I’ve already started to miss you, even when I haven’t left yet. Please take care, my love. Inscribed by, Zhang Gong Wei.”

Mu Zi’s tears fell, dampening the letter. She said, dazed, “Zhang Gong, you’re so silly! Why didn’t you tell me that you had to go?” She just sat there in a daze feeling the loss from Zhang Gong’s departure.

“Hey, Mu Zi, where’s Zhang Gong?” A familiar voice came over.

Mu Zi momentarily got out from her shock and turned to see that it was Zhan Hu.

When Zhan Hu saw Mu Zi’s tear stained face, he frowned and asked, “What happened? Mu Zi, did Zhang Gong bully you? Tell me if he did. I’ll help you in punishing him.”

Mu Zi shook her head with all her might and her tears involuntarily flowed again. “Big Brother Zhan Hu, Zhang Gong...he left.”

Zhan Hu was so startled that he cried out, “What? He left? Where did he go?”

Mu Zi suppressed her emotions and replied, “He has gone to accept the Radiant God’s inheritance. Have a look at this.” Upon saying that, she passed the letter in her hand to Zhan Hu.

After Zhan Hu read through the letter in detail, he fumed. “That brat, how can he just leave without a word. I won’t forgive him when he gets back.”

Mu Zi said, “Big Brother Zhan Hu, please don’t blame him. I understand his intentions . He did it as he feared everyone would be extremely worried about him when he left. Moreover, he is already gone so it’s too late to say anything now.”

Zhan Hu scratched his head. “We also don’t know when he will return. Sigh...he really is..... Forget it, let’s not talk about this. I’ve come to find him as a pretty girl is outside and looking for him. We’ve caught her, she’s a mage. Her power isn’t bad, her name is something like Hai... Hai....”

Mu Zi exclaimed, “Hai Shui?!”

Zhan Hu replied, “Yes! Yes! She’s called Hai Shui. Do you know her?”

Mu Zi nodded. “Big Brother Zhan Hu, I’ll go with you to see her.” Mu Zi and Zhan Hu dashed out from Zhang Gong’s room after she said that. They crossed the hillside of the God’s Protector Domain to the watch post manned by a few soldiers.

Mu Zi had recognised Hai Shui’s blue mage robes from afar. Even though Hai Shui was still beautiful, there were still a lot of changes. Her small face was completely white devoid of blood. The robe on her body was tattered. Her face was a picture of exhaustion as she anxiously waited. She seemed to have suffered greatly on her journey!

Mu Zi floated over. “Hai Shui!”

Hai Shui’s eyes lit up and quickly jumped towards Mu Zi after recognising her. “Sister Mu Zi, I’ve finally found you guys. The search was so tough!”

Mu Zi embraced Hai Shui’s body and caressed her hair. She consoled her, “Don’t cry, Hai Shui. Why have you come?”

Hai Shui used her sleeves to wipe away her tears . “Ma Ke had told me about Zhang Gong’s news when he returned to the city. I was almost

angered to death by Zhang Gong when I read his letter. What did Big Brother Zhang Gong think I am? Could it be that my heart will change once his appearance changed? I already swore long ago that he will be the perfect Big Brother Zhang Gong in my heart, no matter what changes have occurred. I immediately heard from Ma Ke that Big Brother Zhang Gong will be in this mountain range so I hurried over after reading the letter."

Mu Zi's body shuddered as she could understand the deep longing that filled Hai Shui's eyes very well. A girl had suddenly left her homeland to run to such a remote location for Zhang Gong. 'Zhang Gong! Zhang Gong! It really looks like Hai Shui's feelings aren't inferior to mine.'

"Sister Hai Shui, did you inform your family when you left?"

Hai Shui's lovely face reddened before she whispered, "I...I snuck out. Your place is really hard to find. It took me two days to enter this mountain range. I finally found this place after much difficulty, but they hindered me." Upon saying that, Hai Shui glared fiercely at the guards at the watch post.

Mu Zi smiled. "Don't blame them as they are just doing their job. Sister, you've really suffered. Let's head back to my room to rest for a while."

Hai Shui hesitated for a while before looking at Mu Zi's back. She stuttered, "Big Sister Mu Zi, where's Big Brother Zhang Gong? Why didn't he come to receive me? Could it be...Could it be that he doesn't want to meet me?" Upon saying that, Hai Shui's eye rims reddened again.

Mu Zi smiled wryly. "How can that be? If he knew you'd come, he would definitely be the first one to greet you. However, he just left. Take a look at this." Mu Zi passed over the letter in her hand.

Hai Shui was stunned after reading the letter's contents and said in a daze, "I never expected that I would have just missed him after travelling so far." Hai Shui's body slumped and fell towards the ground. Mu Zi hastily supported her body.

Zhan Hu jumped in shock. "What's happened to her? What's going on?"

Mu Zi checked on Hai Shui's condition in detail. She finally let out a breath after a long while. "Sister Hai Shui has always loved Zhang Gong. You should ask your good brother about the details in the future. There's nothing wrong with Sister Hai Shui. She has just collapsed from the accumulated exhaustion, the cold and being overcome with grief. Big Brother Zhan Hu, let's head back to the base. She'll get better after resting for a while."

Mu Zi sighed inwardly as she carried Hai Shui. 'Zhang Gong! Zhang Gong! You really picked a good time to leave!'

## Chapter 6: Refused Entry to the City

'I don't know why I suddenly sneezed. It may just be Mu Zi missing me.'

After leaving the God's Protector Domain, I had already left the mountain range and travelled for a few hours. My current goal was to head back to Ström Fortress. I was the only one who knew the exact position of the Radiant God's inheritance so I wasn't worried about them catching up with me.

The sun was high and the sky was cloudless, so I chose to fly, in order to find the God Rended Canyon after leaving the God's Protector Domain. Since I left, I wanted to get the Radiant God's inheritance as soon as possible so I could return sooner. I initially thought of using a long distance teleportation spell as it guaranteed reaching the target and became more accurate as my power increased. However, after thinking about it for a while, I ditched that plan. If I were to fail, who knows where I would end up? It might backfire and take longer for me to get to the fortress instead. Even though my flying speed wasn't comparable to the magic array teleportation spell, my speed was still considerably fast.

The God King had once mentioned that the God Rended Canyon was at the western side of the border between the Humans and the Demons, which would mean the front portion of Ström Fortress. I would just need to search to the west to find God Rended Canyon.

I had sustained flight for an entire day. The sun passed over me as the world turned, towards the west, the sun began to set causing the sky to gradually darken. The consumption of power in my body during the long flight was extreme. In addition, I hadn't eaten all day so it was difficult for my body to endure the journey, even when using my fusion power. Weakness and exhaustion constantly sapped my body's strength.

As I was getting a tired, I suddenly saw a piece of land in front of me that was brightly lit. I activated the fusion powers in my eyes. It was a city. The Kingdom of Dalu was the closest kingdom to Ström Fortress, so this should be Dalu. Since I was tired, I decided to rest up in the city ahead. Thinking about that, I took out the wrapped Sukrad's staff from

my space pocket and a brand new white mage's robe. I descended carefully after donning the robe and used a short-distance teleportation spell to enter the forest beside the entrance.

After checking that no one was around, I pulled down the hood of the mage's robe and walked towards the city with my head lowered.

I was nearing the city entrance quickly, but I heard someone shout, "The entrance is closing! The entrance is closing!"

I was stunned before lifting my head to look at the entrance. I saw that a couple of guards were currently pushing the door outwards from both sides of the inner door, resulting to the door closing. I raised my head and saw three characters on the top of the doors, Myriad Sugars City. I couldn't be that unlucky, right? If I knew this sooner, I would have just directly teleported into the city.

"Wait! Wait for a moment! Officers, please let me enter." Upon saying that, I walked towards the city.

"Stop! Didn't you see that we're already closing the entrance? A soldier stopped me as he sized me up.

I hastily said, "Officers, I've come from afar and really am too exhausted to move any further. Please let me in."

That officer glared at me. "We have a rule here that nobody can enter after the curfew. Even if it's the Emperor, we also won't allow his entry. Go! Go! Go! Go away! If you really want to enter the city, you just have to wait for the next morning."

I frowned as I was getting annoyed so my tone also got heavier. "You, the Kingdom of Dalu, also known as the Peaceful Kingdom are so unreasonable!"

That soldier that seemed to be in a hurry to enter fumed after hearing my words. "We're just doing our job. What is so unreasonable about that? Leave quickly! We're closing the door." Upon saying that, he extended his hand to push me away. I didn't want to bicker with such a person so I moved to the side in a flash dodging his hand before turning around to

head back. If they didn't allow me to enter, I just had to go over the walls.

Just when I turned around, I heard a distinct sound of horses galloping. I saw that they were a good breed from the speed they were travelling. Their goal was to the Myriad Sugars City. I thought about that and used a short teleportation to the side, in order to get out of the way.

The galloping of the horses became clearer after a while. A few dozen cavalrymen were galloping over. I focused my gaze on them. The leader had an imposing appearance and his height was similar to mine. His build was much sturdier than mine and he wore silver armour. He was fairly good looking with a straight nose and square jaw. His age was similar to mine. He showed an anxious expression and constantly urged his warhorse forward, carrying a silver spear hanging diagonally across his back. The valiant people following him should be his subordinates.

They galloped past me like lightning, heading to the city entrance. However, the city's door had closed already.

The silver armoured youth's riding technique was good. After seeing the entrance shut, he violently pulled on the reins of the horse causing it to rear at the sudden stop. The youth reined up his mount cavalrymen following him also stopped.

"Open the door!" The youth shouted.

The soldier at the city top looked down and shouted, "Who comes?"

The youth impatiently shouted, "I'm Marshall Feng Hao's vice-captain. I have official business. Open the door!"

I thought, 'So, he's the subordinate of Marshall Feng Hao. I haven't met him before. It seems that there are plenty of talented individuals in the Kingdom of Dalu!'

The people at the head of the city shouted, "Please wait a moment."

The door opened in a short moment and a small squad of cavalry rode over. The leader of the team, wearing a high-ranking military officer attire, told that silver-armoured youth, "Please show me your pass."

The silver-armoured youth took out something and passed it over. When the leader saw it, he immediately said respectfully. "So it is Lord Ke Er Lan Di. Please quickly enter."

This was so unfair. They didn't allow me to enter the city, but once that person showed his pass, they allowed him entry. I, having a competitive spirit, used the time as the cavalry entered the city to teleport to the back of their team, then another teleportation to be the first into the city.

## Chapter 7: Whispers

That youth known as Ke Er lan Di felt something and surveyed his surroundings. I didn't want to find trouble so I used a few short teleportations to enter the city. I didn't care about them as I wanted to rest. After finding an inn to rest up at and get some food, I lay down on a large comfortable bed and fell into an extremely sound sleep. It was already difficult for me, a lazy person, to rush for an entire day. I wanted to rest up now and some more tomorrow to recover my energy. My skills in meditating by sleeping had been trained for more than a day or two already. My body relaxed after laying down on the bed. I circulated my fusion powers and constantly absorbed the light elements in my surroundings. I rapidly entered a dream state when my body was warm and comfortable.

I stretched lazily getting out of bed the next morning. Not only had the powers in my body recovered after sleeping, but I felt exceptionally comfortable. I put the hood on to cover up my ugly face as I went to the lounge of the inn to eat in solitude.

The inn's business was scarce as there were only a few tables filled with patrons.

I suddenly heard someone from behind me whispering while I ate. They seemed to be a couple from their voices.

The guy said, "Lan Lan, I heard that when our kingdom's Marshall Feng Hao returned to the city, he asked His Majesty to resign from his position. Marshall Feng Hao has been working hard for all these years, even if he doesn't have many contributions. Moreover, he's the one who knows the most about the frontline. His resignation is such a shame."

The girl sounded very gentle. She seemed to be a gentle and tender girl as she said, "En! I feel that Marshall Feng Hao has been treated unjustly. Actually, the one that suddenly changed his stance must be His Majesty, while Marshall Feng Hao became the scapegoat. I also heard that the Emperor of the Kingdom of Aixia has already abdicated his claim to the throne due to this matter."

The guy replied, “Who told them to offend God’s Envoys? The negotiation with the Demon-Beast alliance is really a good thing because we can avoid loss of lives. However, I just feel that those God’s Envoys aren’t any good. They constantly say that the Monster race is emerging and made the various kingdoms to prepare to resist them. It’s still unknown whether it’s true or not. Anyway, I’ve never heard about the Monster race. It might just be something the God’s Envoys fabricated to scare us.”

The girl said, “That’s enough, you shouldn’t continue to comment on them. Currently, there’s a lot of God’s Envoy believers. If they were to hear what you said, they would fight you with all their might. I’ve heard from the rumours that the leader of the God’s Envoys is an extremely ugly mage. He’s originally from the Kingdom of Aixia, but he was arrested for some various reasons. He suddenly disappeared after that. He became God’s Envoy after reappearing.”

I inwardly smiled wryly after hearing their conversation. It seemed that the people thoughts on the current situation were quite hopeful. I didn’t mind their words as once the Monster race appeared, more carnage will occur. Shedding blood would be a wake up call for any non-believing humans.

My good appetite vanished as I shook my head after listening. Humans would definitely not trust me just from my words. I also couldn’t stand in the streets warning people, telling everybody that I know how scary the Monster King is. If I were to do that, I would probably be arrested for being a mad man.

I walked out of the inn with a slightly melancholic after settling the bill. The weather today wasn’t good. It was drizzling and was filled with dark clouds. I took in a mouthful of cold air while I walked in the rain. What should I do now? I had put in so much effort, but currently, there were still people that didn’t understand my hard work. Even though the words of two people didn’t mean that everyone thought that way, there would definitely be a group of them that would think that way too. Could it really be that they would only understand after people died? A feeling of

depression filled my heart. I felt so helpless this time.

“What are you thinking about brother?” A clear voice sounded from my side. I didn’t need to see that I was the one he was talking to as I could feel his gaze on my back. I said calmly, “Are you talking to me? I don’t think we know each other.” I knew that person’s power was near the Radiant Knight’s rank, judging from the aura I felt from that person.

“Perhaps, but with brother’s profound magic, it’s really a pity not to join the army.”

I was startled as I turned around and looked at that person. Ah! He was unexpectedly the one that was leading the cavalry into the city yesterday, Commander Ke Er Lan Di. He was still wearing a silver armor and had a long sword at his waist, looking at me with interest.

I lowered my voice. “How did you know my magic is profound?”

Ke Er Lan Di replied, “You told me yourself!”

I replied, stunned, “Me?”

Ke Er Lan Di nodded. “I’ve never seen a mage like you before. You can just stand in the rain and not get wet without chanting. Anyone that sees what is happening now will jump in shock. You should be at least at a Magic Scholar’s level from my judgement.”

I looked upwards after hearing what he said. As expected, the rain that would have landed on me automatically moved three inches away, leaving me completely dry. However, he was wrong to think that I was a Magic Scholar, currently my magic power might be beyond that of the continent’s first Magister, Teacher Zhen.

Ke Er Lan Di replied, “If brother doesn’t want to shock the bystanders, you should come over here.” Upon saying that, he pointed to his side. He was standing at the entrance of the inn that I just left. The downpour from the inn’s roof was like a barrier separating us.

I looked in my surroundings. There weren’t many people around due to the rain, for now no one would pay attention to me. I didn’t know what purpose Ke Er Lan Di had, but still walked over to him. I asked

indifferently, “May I ask what you wished to discuss?”

Ke Er Lan Di looked unflustered with a faint smile on his face. “I just saw that brother was standing in the streets despondently, so I thought that you might have some matters that aren’t going too well for you. I don’t know what’s wrong, but maybe I can help?”

## Chapter 8: To Invite Great Kindness

He wanted to help me? It couldn't be that simple. I became wary towards him. "I don't need any help as nobody can help me with my affairs."

Ke Er Lan Di replied, "With brother's profound magic cultivation, if it is just this small city, it'll definitely devalue your abilities. I'm Ke Er Lan Di. I'm currently in charge of a lot of duties in the army. If you're willing, I can guarantee that you'll be able to join the army. We can work side by side and become famous."

I was stunned and felt that this situation was exceptionally funny. I never thought that he would unexpectedly try to recruit me to join the army. Seeing that Ke Er Lan Di didn't have any ill intentions, I relaxed and smiled, "You want me to join the army? What position will you be giving me?"

A trace of happiness showed in Ke Er Lan Di's eyes. "I'm the vice-captain for Lord Feng Hao. You should know him, right?"

I nodded. "Of course, he's the great Marshall of the Kingdom of Dalu."

Ke Er Lan Di replied dejectedly, "He originally was, but currently due to some changes in Ström Fortress, he has already resigned from his Marshall position, was demoted and tasked to command the second defensive line."

I smiled. "There'll surely be a day that Marshall Feng Hao will regain his prestige." I didn't say that to be courteous, but Feng Hao resigned to shoulder the responsibilities of the Kingdom of Dalu. I believed that the kingdom would think of a way to recover his position in a short while.

Ke Er Lan Di replied, "Let's hope that is the case. However, even if the Lord has been dispatched to the second front, his words should still carry weight due to his position serving the Kingdom for so many years. Currently, what the army lacks is mages, especially high leveled mages. If you were to join the army, I'll definitely make you my aide. We'll attack without restraint when fighting against our enemies."

The Vice-Captain's aide? That position couldn't be low. It seemed that Ke Er Lan Di really needed mages like a man needed water in a desert. I said calmly, "Lord Ke Er Lan Di, we just met each other today. How can you be so certain about my personality? Can it be that you wouldn't mind a person with bad character to be by your side?"

Ke Er Lan Di smiled. "Since you said that, it proves that you're not that kind of person. Let's go! I'll treat you for a drink. We can continue to chat while we drink."

I nodded and followed him back to the inn. Ke Er Lan Di ordered some food and an expensive wine, which was grown in the Kingdom of Dalu. He personally topped up the wine in a emerald green cup. "Please try some. You should be from the Kingdom of Aixia, judging from your accent. You mustn't have tried the best wines from here. Please give it a taste. It's definitely unique."

He really was an observant person, as he noticed the finest details. I raised the wine cup. The fragrance from the red tinged wine in the emerald cup made me relax. "Good wine!" I took a sip and the slightly sour and bitter wine flowed down my throat. Initially, I frowned, but as the wine entered my throat, it suddenly became sweet. A sweet feeling arose from my heart. My body was warmed from the inside, the pores from my body opened up, making me instantly feel exceptionally at ease. I couldn't help but praise it again, "Good wine!"

Ke Er Lan Di also drank. "Although this wine isn't top-grade, it's not bad. I never got the chance to see your appearance. Can I....."

I shook my head. "My appearance has been ruined during my youth. It's best that you don't see. I'm afraid that I'll frighten you."

Ke Er Lan Di replied, stunned, "Why would I be? I don't judge from people's appearance."

I didn't want to let him see as I didn't want him to recognize my identity. Even if he was the Vice-Captain of Marshall Feng Hao, he might have seen me at Ström Fortress. I interrupted, "What is the general up to?"

Ke Er Lan Di said, “I plan to station the troops of Ström Fortress in preparation to wait for the new Marshall. I was previously ordered by Marshall Feng Hao to return to the city here to gather some rations so I missed the good show. I heard that when the three Human kingdoms and the Demon-Beast alliance were preparing to reconcile, Emperor Ke Zha from the Kingdom of Aixia suddenly changed his mind and wanted to attack the Demon-Beast alliance troops. His move instantly upset a few of the God’s Envoys. They created a one kilometer chasm on the flat plain in front of the fort by using some unknown power. That scene must have been astonishing. It’s a pity that I didn’t get to see that.” He expressed regret for not being able to see that. After a while, he continued to say, “Brother, your age shouldn’t be too old, judging from your voice. How about joining the army?”

I shook my head. “I temporarily haven’t considered joining the army. My objective now is to go to Ström Fortress to have a look, which is to say I want to admire the chasm that you spoke of.”

Ke Er Lan Di frowned when I rejected the offer to join their army, but after hearing that I was heading to the Ström Fortress, he immediately said, “Let’s head there together then. Moreover, the distance to Ström Fortress from here isn’t too far. We’ll be able to reach it in a few days on horse back.”

Seeing his sincere appearance, I didn’t want to reject him. But if I were to fly with all my strength, I would be able to reach the Ström Fortress in a day. I wondered if I should agree.

Ke Er Lan Di saw me hesitating so he quickly added. “If you come with us, you’ll definitely decrease your troubles. You should know that the Ström Fortress is undergoing repair so ordinary people can’t enter. With my pass, if you come with us, entering the city will be much easier.”

His words didn’t have much effect as my goal wasn’t to be inside the Ström Fortress and I could just fly there. Forget it, since it wouldn’t take up much time, I would just go and travel with him by horse. I had always been riding Xiao Jin in the sky. I hadn’t ridden a horse since I was young. It would be good to give it a try.

“Alright, I’ll have to trouble you then.”

## Chapter 9: Leaving on a Journey

Ke Er Lan Di laughed. “What are you saying? It’s my luck to be able to invite you, a profound mage, to accompany us on this trip. It’s settled then. You just have to wait for me here. I’ll go and pack up now. After a while, I’ll come and get you.” Upon saying that, he downed the rest of his glass and turned around to head out.

It seemed that I didn’t need to depend on my identity to be liked by others. I would just let him gather his troops. This wine was really not bad. Since he wasn’t going to finish it, I thought I should help him. I grabbed onto the bottle and unceremoniously drank from it. Since I wasn’t in a good mood previously, I hadn’t had my fill. The few dishes that Ke Er Lan Di ordered were the most expensive dishes on the menu here. I could just have another meal. Mu Zi and I had stomachs that were bottomless pits so I could continue to eat, these few dishes were nothing to me. I ate the majority of the delicacies on the table like a gale had passed through. That fellow Ke Er Lan Di had left in such a hurry so he didn’t pay the bill yet. Could it be that I would have to pay for it? It seemed that I could only wait for his return. I prayed for his return as I really didn’t bring much money due to leaving in a hurry. The overall cost of all the wine and food shouldn’t be low. The taste of the wine wasn’t bad, but the cup wasn’t ideal. I heard from Teacher Di that when drinking wine, it depends on the cup. Even though it was only jade cups this time, I could accept it.

Fortunately, I clearly heard a horse’s hooves after a short while. It should be a dozen of Ke Er Lan Di’s cavalrymen.”

As expected, my judgement was right. The horse’s hooves stopped at the entrance of the inn. Ke Er Lan Di excitedly came back.

“Brother, we can head out now. Oh! That’s right, I haven’t asked for your name.”

I was stunned as I couldn’t tell him the truth. “My Lord, you don’t need to be so courteous. You can just call me Eighteen, as that’s what my friends call me.” I suddenly reminisced the time I had spent chopping

firewood at the Demon Race's Royal Palace.

Ke Er Lan Di didn't ask any further. "Brother Eighteen, let's head out now."

I looked at the remaining food and empty red bottle of wine on the table. I smiled wryly. "Lord Ke Er, you had said that you'll be going to treat this meal." I already couldn't care about my face at such a moment.

Ke Er Lan Di replied in a daze, stunned, "Yes, that's right. My apologies that I've forgotten about it. Boss, settle the bills."

After seeing that Ke Er Lan Di paid for the bills, I heaved a sigh of relief. This could be counted that I owed him a favour. I grabbed onto the cloth covered Sukrad's staff and followed him out the inn. His subordinates were waiting there radiating valiance. There were two riderless horses, one of them should be Ke Er Lan Di's and the other should be prepared for me.

"Eighteen, please, this is your mount." Ke Er Lan Di politely pulled a white, tall and large horse in front of me. His subordinates looked at me with curious gazes. The drizzle outside had already stopped, but the sky was still gloomy. It seemed that it had been a long time since I rode a horse. I didn't know if this horse would treat me well.

Ke Er Lan Di seemed to know what I was thinking about as he smiled and said, "Rest assured, Eighteen. I know that you're a mage so I picked a relatively good natured horse. Do you need my help to get on the horse?"

I shook my head, when I was at the Kingdom of Xiuda, I had received Teacher Wen's hellish training. My physique was still alright. I grabbed on the saddle and stirrup to sit on the horse. The horse was good-natured, like Ke Er Lan Di had said. There wasn't any resistance when I sat on his back. I let out a sigh and began to enjoy the feeling of riding the horse. It really felt as though I was looking down on the land when I sat on the tall horse.

Ke Er Lan Di smiled. "Brother Eighteen, I'll give you an introduction. These are my brothers. They have a cavalry title at the very least."

When I surveyed the group of cavalry, there were 18 of them, excluding Ke Er Lan Di. All of them looked cold and collected with a stern expression. Their emotions were hidden. Their cultivation weren't weak from the aura emitting from their bodies. They were near Sky Knight rank. It seemed that Ke Er Lan Di wasn't simple since his subordinates were all experts. I nodded towards the crowd. "It's nice to meet all of you. I'm Eighteen. Please take care of me."

Ke Er Lan Di said, "Alright, let's get on our way." Upon saying that, he turned the horse around to head out of the city. I hastily followed his actions to moving the horse into action. It was a pity that it didn't really listen to me. It did move, but his speed was very slow. Luckily, Ke Er Kan Di and the rest didn't move too fast. After adjusting for a while, when we left the city, I was able to put up with it forcefully due to my talent.

Ke Er Lan Di and I were riding at the front of the column. He often told me interesting things that happened in the army. It looked like this fellow was extremely well known in the Kingdom of Dalu. He joined the army when he was fourteen and slowly accumulated his contributions to reach his current position. There wasn't anything to do with luck in getting his position. He was currently 26, so he was much older than me. But there weren't any traces of time's baptism visible on his face.

"Brother Eighteen, I don't know which magic do you practice."

I answered, "I learn light magic and studied at the Senke Magic Academy." Senke Magic Academy was the biggest academy in the Senke City, which was beside my home. It was definitely well known in the Kingdom of Aixia, but it still wasn't comparable to the Royal Magic Academy.

Ke Er Lan Di didn't doubt my words. "Can I ask what's your current level and realm that you have reached in magic?"

I shook my head. "I'm not too sure. It should be at the Magic Scholar's realm that you said."

Ke Er Lan Di nodded. "Is light magic hard to learn? I heard that the elemental light magic doesn't have much offensive power."

After hearing what he said, I couldn't help thinking the reason why I chose to learn light magic. The me from before would never expect that I would reach such a progress in magic today. Sigh! Perhaps, it was destined.

# Chapter 10: Sinister Clouds in the Dark of Night

“Brother Eighteen, what’s wrong?”

“Ah!” I got caught up in my memories. “Nothing much, I was just thinking about when I first started to learn magic. You’re right that at the beginning, light magic doesn’t have any offensive power, but it gets better once you reach the intermediate level.”

Ke Er Lan Di said, “Nobody cared about light magic before, but it’s different now. Everyone is fighting to learn it. Those that haven’t laid their foundations in magic have gone to learn light magic.”

I asked, stunned, “Why? It’s really very hard to train to higher realms in light magic. Its improvement speed is much lower than fire magic.”

Ke Er Lan Di sighed. “Talking about this, you need to know about the God’s Envoy. You know who the God’s Envoys are, right? It’s that fellow that succeeded in getting our three Human kingdoms, Demons, and Beasts to reconcile. I heard that he was initially from your Kingdom of Aixia. His light magic is extremely incredible. It’s said that he’s already beyond the Magister’s realm and is just a step away from the realm of Grand Magister. Currently, everyone from the Kingdom of Aixia treats him as their pride.”

There was such a thing? Why didn’t I know that? I felt very comfortable hearing him praise me. “That’s what I heard from the rumours, but how powerful is he truly, I want to seek for his guidance if a chance arises.”

Ke Er Lan Di laughed. “Alright, let’s increase our pace. If not, we’ll miss our resting point tonight.” Upon saying that, he spurred his horse forward. I could only follow him and grit my teeth.

Riding a horse wasn’t fun. My entire body was extremely sore after half a day of riding. I was lucky that my physique wasn’t bad and managed to endure it. The sky darkened. Due to accommodating me, we hadn’t reached the next city.

Ke Er Lan Di pointed to the forest by the roadside. “Let’s rest here tonight and continue tomorrow.”

His subordinate said, “Lord, if we don’t catch up some time, we won’t be able to reach the fort at the appointed time. What do you think?”

Ke Er Lan Di waved his hand. “It’s not something important. It’s alright to be late a few nights. I’m also a little tired. Let’s rest here today. We’ll just wake up earlier tomorrow to head out.”

My heart warmed after hearing his words. ‘He was really thoughtful. Ke Er Lan Di was a really good guy, worth befriending and even if it was to recruit me.’ I silently led my horse to follow the troops into the forest. After tying the horse, a few cavalrymen cleared some space. Some started to light a fire, and some began to bring out their bedrolls that they carried and placed them on the floor. Everything was in order, it could be seen that they were all well trained.

Everyone crowded around the fire and ate their rations. The sky had completely darkened. Ke Er Lan Di really knew how to enjoy himself, as even though it was only rations, they were still good food and wine. It was the same kind of wine that we drank at the inn.

“Ever since I joined the army, I always liked this wine. First it’s bitter, but the sweet aftertaste moves me.” Ke Er Lun Di said that, slightly intoxicated.

I took the wine in his hand and drank a big mouthful of it. “Can soldiers drink wine? I remembered that the armies from the three kingdoms are restricted from drinking.”

Ke Er Lan Di laughed. “I know this better than you do. However, this type of wine doesn’t have much impact, and aren’t I secretly drinking it now? My brother subordinates were influenced by me and love this wine as well, so they won’t report me.” He grabbed the wine bottle in my hands and drank a mouthful. The blood red wine seeped out from the sides of his mouth. His heroic spirit momentarily affected the crowd as they started to drink too.

This type of feeling wasn’t bad—sitting in front of a fire, eating delicacies and drinking good wine, it was really nice! The gentle breeze caused the leaves to rustle as it blew through the clearing. In addition to

chirping of insects, it gave me a rather calm feeling.

After everyone had their fill, only four knights were on watch duty and everyone else started to rest.

Ke Er Lan Di lay side by side with me in watching the stars. He said, "Eighteen, this isn't the first time you rode a horse, right?"

I smiled wryly. "You could see that? It can't be counted as my first because I've ridden a couple of times before in my childhood." When I mentioned about my childhood, I started to think about my parents at the faraway Aixia. I didn't know how were they now. I hadn't been back for such a long time already. They must be missing me greatly, but I really couldn't head back now as there were too many things that I needed to settle. Moreover, I had such a ghastly appearance. I wondered if they could still recognise me.

Ke Er Lan Di smiled. "I've been a soldier for many years. If I couldn't figure this out, I would have wasted all my years of training. I could tell from the posture when you rode the horse. You're already not bad. If it was an ordinary mage, they would just fall forwards. Learning to ride a horse isn't something you do in one or two days."

I withdrew my thoughts. "If you were to continue bringing me along, it'll definitely affect your speed. How about you head back first? We can still meet up in the future."

Ke Er Lan Di said, "It doesn't matter. Since we embarked together, we should reach our destination together. It's alright to be a bit slow, currently the three Human kingdoms, Demons, and Beasts have successfully reconciled. Moreover, there's the man made rift made by the God's Envoys. There shouldn't be any problem."

The temporary peace might not be something good because the Monster Race were plotting in the dark. They might start to massacre the various races when they reemerged.

Just as I wanted to speak, the sky darkened. It seemed that a sinister cloud had covered the clear night. Ke Er Lan Di also noticed. "Hmm? It can't be that it's going to rain, right? There's no shelter here. If it were to

rain, it will be terrible.”

The power of the Holy Sword at my chest suddenly surged. My entire body tensed up. I knew what that cloud was. It was the Holy Sword’s alert that immediately made me become wary. I said seriously, “Ke Er, that’s not right. It doesn’t seem to be clouds. Quickly, have everyone on alert. This atmosphere isn’t right.”

## Chapter 11: Monster Traces Suddenly Appear

Ke Er Lan Di was stunned. “What’s wrong? It can’t be—there’s nothing wrong here.”

My bad premonition was growing; there was a sinister chill coming from nearby. I waved my hand, casting a low grade water spell to put out the fire at the camp. I grabbed Sukrad’s staff and stood up as I could clearly feel the Monster race’s aura. I knew the demonic aura so well that I couldn’t be more familiar with them. Why had they appeared here?

Ke Er Lan Di stood with me, but he seemed to be unable to discover anything amiss. He frowned. “Eighteen, are you serious? Why can’t I feel anything then?”

I whispered, “Quickly, get everyone up. Our surroundings are filled with a terrifying power. We must be prepared.”

Ke Er Lan Di nodded. He was a well trained soldier with a lot of experience after all. He was good at adapting to sudden situations. His subordinates were really remarkable as they had already gathered without making a single sound.

The sinister aura in the sky thickened. Ke Er Lan Di also felt something was wrong at this moment. “What’s that? It looks sinister.”

I said seriously, “If I haven’t guessed wrong, it should be the Monster race.”

“Monster Race? Ke Er Lan Di cried out, “There’s really a Monster race?”

I looked at him and shook my head helplessly. “There’s a lot of people in the continent that have the same mindset as you do. I can tell you now that they really exist as I’ve fought against them. You shouldn’t ask anything for the moment as we should deal with the situation at hand. Everyone follow me to see what’s happening.”

Upon saying that, I used my senses to walk deep into the forest.

It was easy to differentiate the Monster race’s deathly aura. I just moved towards where the aura was at its thickest. This should find them. Ke Er

Lan Di brought his 18 subordinates to follow me closely, without making a single sound.

The deathly aura was getting increasingly thick. It was so thick that it emitted a strong pressure.

Finally, when we walked into the depths of the forest, I found the source of the deathly aura. It was a clearing within the forest. The clearing didn't have any trace of life. The grey land meant that there weren't any creatures, and the grass in the surroundings showed signs of withering. There was a pit about 16 metres wide at the center of the clearing. It was impossible to see what was in it from our viewpoint. Faint red light came out from that hole, giving it an exceptionally sinister feeling.

Ke Er Lan Di said, "Is this the den of the Monster race?"

I nodded slightly. "It's very possible. Let's just wait and see." This hole was much smaller than the one beside our base that Big Brother Zhang Hu and the rest of us had eliminated. There weren't any monsters appearing, but I was certain that this was another sinister spawning ground for the Monster race. I had to kill them while they were spawning. Otherwise, it would bring an unknown number of losses.

The sky was still as gloomy. The centre of the sinister looking clouds was above this hole.

Rustling sounds could be heard from the hole. I hastily gave a 'Be careful' eye signal towards Ke Er Lan Di as I no longer tried to keep my identity a secret. I stealthily took out Sukrad's staff from the cloth. I activated the fusion power in my body to sustain my peak state. While I was preparing, the rustling sound got stronger.

'Rustle! Rustle!' Ten black figures shot out from the hole and landed on the ground. I had seen those disgusting and horrifying monsters before. They seemed to sense a human's aura as their glimmering red eyes shot in our direction.

I whispered, "Everyone, take care of yourself." I definitely wouldn't show mercy to that sinister race. After confirming my thoughts, I decided to annihilate them at lightning speed.

After activating my body's powers, I didn't care about Ke Er Lan Di's surprised gaze and leapt out. The Sukrad's staff brought a white light with it. A 10m white light ray shot towards the monsters in front of us.

After a loud explosion, a few of the monsters were instantly annihilated from being engulfed with the light element's purifying power, like a spring wind that swept past. However, I didn't relax as more monsters were rapidly flowing out of the hole.

"Light elements! My great friends, I plead to you to use your power to form limitless light rays to form light stars and to eliminate the enemies before you.—Bright Star's Shine!"

Light elements rapidly gathered by my side and constantly forming light stars, creating layer after layer. I chanted to bring forth the maximum power of this magic spell.

My body floated as I retreated into the forest. Numerous light stars burst forth at my command. The intense light made Ke Er Lan Di, the rest of his subordinates and I to lose our sight. I clearly felt the monsters that were surging out from the hole were vaporized from my attack, including some of the monsters that were still in the hole.

When the light dimmed, the clearing was already filled with thousands of holes and green fluid was everywhere. I didn't know how many monsters had died. The entire clearing formed a gigantic hole. Waves of sickening odor wafted towards us, making me frown.

Ke Er Lun Duo looked stunned at what happened and muttered, "This... What magic is this to have such might? You...You can't just be a Magic Scholar, right?"

I said seriously, "I'm not done yet. Be careful." I started to gather the power from the Holy Sword to completely erase this den.

There were suddenly mournful shrieks from the den as a couple of red lights dashed towards us. I brandished Sukrad's staff horizontally to cast a light screen to use it as a barrier that would block the monsters that were coming out. With a flash of light, they were eliminated by my light elements.

The monsters that were currently emerging were three times as fast as they were before. The offensive power of those monsters was slowly becoming stronger. If it weren't for the steady flow of fusion power in my body, it would really be difficult to deal with them.

## Chapter 12: Desperate Situation

The fighting with the monsters this time was different than with the God Protector Domain, as I didn't have my brothers' support. Moreover, we were currently fighting from the outer perimeter to its interior. Since I had more manpower at that time, I could freely use my Holy Sword's power. However, now I couldn't because the monsters were constantly appearing. I could only resist them, giving me no chance to gather the Holy Sword's power.

"Large Dimensional Slash." I used the space magic offensive spell with all my might. Space seemed to have broken, causing a crack to form and sucking in over a hundred monsters.

My body swayed a little after using that Large Dimensional Slash, as long periods of time while using powerful offensive powers took a huge portion of my powers. Even though my fusion power recovery rate was fast, I didn't have any time to take a break.

The ground from underneath me suddenly began to shake and a strong power came forth. I didn't have the time to use magic so I quickly leapt to the side. A gigantic spider came out from where I previously stood. It was about 3 meters long. This couldn't be the spider's ancestor, right? Its red eyes glared coldly at me. A translucent green thread shot from its mouth towards me.

The powers in my body were already recovering at this moment. I used short-distance teleportation to dodge its attack. I pointed Sukrad's staff to shoot out a giant light sword. After it struck downwards, a loud explosion occurred and the spider was blasted into smithereens. There was even a deep ditch that appeared on the ground.

When I was dealing with the spider, numerous monsters were emerging from the hole. They were no longer just attacking me as Ke Er Lan Di was also being attacked. All 20 of us entered the battle in that moment. Ke Er Lan Di and the other 18 guards obviously had plenty of fighting experience. They didn't panic or become disorderly when facing the large group of monsters, instead forming a small circle and constantly emitting

their battle spirit to kill their opponent. They would be able to sustain themselves for a while.

In my heart, I secretly cried as I couldn't gather the Holy Sword's power now to eliminate them once and for all. Judging from the current situation, I also couldn't fly up to gather my powers as there were many monsters that had wings. Currently, the pressure on me was getting greater and greater as the attacks from the monsters were coming from all directions. I really regretted not taking the time at the start using the Holy Sword's power to destroy this hole. Even though the hole wasn't bigger than the one that the God's Protector Domain destroyed, the timing for the spawning of the monsters was getting faster. At this rate, it would be my death once I used up my powers.

I still couldn't think of any good ways to deal with them as time gradually passed.

I thought of escaping on my own. It wouldn't be a problem for me to escape using my space magic, but how could I? There was Ke Er Lan Di and the rest. Moreover, even if they weren't here, I couldn't let these monsters leave and cause harm in the world. It would be great if Xiao Jin, Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest were here. With their help, I would have been able to use the divine power of the Holy Sword. I had learned a lot, but didn't know how to apply it. I originally felt that my powers weren't bad, but seeing today's situation, it really wasn't enough! These were only low-class monsters and if some of the Monster race's experts were to come, I would die today. What light spell did I have that I could sustain for some time and still had formidable power, in order to give me enough time to gather the Holy Sword's power? These monsters weren't something that human soldiers could resist and this more than ever proved that I really needed to accept the Radiant God's inheritance.

The various Monsters were getting increasingly stronger. Even though I could still sustain myself, Ke Er Lan Di and the other brothers were having a tough time as a majority of them were injured. Two of the soldiers were severely injured so they were protected in the center by Ke Er Lan Di's command, keeping them safe for a moment. However, the

situation was already difficult even with their assistance, but it was getting worse now. When Ke Er Lan Di wasn't careful, he was scratched on the shoulder by a monster, blood momentarily covered half of his body. He bitterly bore the pain and continued resisting the monsters, red battle spirit was continuously emitted from his sword.

Seeing that it was already a crucial moment, if I couldn't think of a good plan, we were all going to die here.

I suddenly thought to the time that I was still at the Aixia's Royal palace. When Mu Zi infiltrated the palace along with many others of the demon race, I had used the forbidden light spell to eliminate most of them with Teacher Zhen's assistance. My current fusion power was much greater than before. I should be able to cast the forbidden spell by myself. If the Eternal Recovery Light could be sustained for a while, I could use all of the Holy Sword's powers. I would then have a greater chance of annihilating this hole. This spell's greatest benefit was that not only can it kill the enemy, but that it could also treat my allies.

It was my only pathway now. I hope that I still have some power after using the forbidden spell. Thinking about that, I clenched my teeth and no longer hesitated. While resisting the monsters in my surroundings, I chanted loudly, "Great Light elements! You hold boundless powers. The darkness before you is insignificant. To the eternal light that is flowing in the horizon, I plead to you to descend into the world and bestow a limitless recovery light on me to recover all pains to end all suffering. Eternal Recovery Light!"

My entire body seemed to have broken apart as the light elements in my surroundings gathered around me. My three gold dans flew out from my dantian to my back, forming an enormous hexagonal array. The numerous light elements in the air started to become frantic. Divine aura surged out from my body. The magic power in my body was rapidly surging outwards, causing waves of exhaustion in me. I cried inwardly as I didn't know if I had enough power remaining to activate the Holy Sword after this forbidden spell.

## Chapter 13: Casting Another Forbidden Spell

The power gradually got stronger and both of my hands were raised involuntarily. Sukrad's staff gave off a peculiar glow as numerous runes were released from the transparent gemstone at the head of the staff, surrounding me.

My eyes turned completely gold, just like when I used the Holy Sword. The hexagon on my back became brighter. There was a faint light phantom that appeared behind me. It was the figure of the Radiant God's battle angel, Mi Jia Lie! His silhouette gradually appeared from my back as the enormous divine power enclosed my body. I gave out a roar while I gathered all of the power into Sukrad's staff, causing a gold light ray to shoot into the sky. The light ray seemed to have substance as it broke through the sinister cloud. The gold light that I shot out was extremely clear in the dark sky, and I felt exceptionally feeble as I had used up 70% of the fusion power in my body. This was a forbidden spell after all.

The pitch black sky suddenly brightened and a fragrance permeated the area, allowing me to refocus. The deathly aura in the sky became increasingly weaker, and the monsters in the surroundings also became sluggish. I tried my best to expand the area of the fusion spell, blowing away the surrounding monsters. The fragrance intensified, giving off a gentle and faint power, giving hope to the humans.

The night suddenly lit up again as the light element rain poured down. The light rain was extremely small as it landed and fused with my body. It not only soothed the meridians that were damaged from overusing my powers, it also constantly recovered the powers in my body.

I specifically restricted the range of the Eternal Recovery Light to a 100 meter radius, which covered the clearing and surrounding forest, so the impact of the forbidden spell would target this area. The light rays intensified, forming an even more densely packed light rain. The monsters in the surrounding area suddenly stopped attacking us and uniformly looked at the change in the sky, their bodies gradually became evanescent wisps of dark energy under the purifying light rain. They were

disappearing one after the other. However, the monsters didn't show painful expressions, they seemed to be relieved instead. Why was that? The light rain flowed constantly without any intention of stopping. I didn't know how much longer it would last, but I definitely couldn't be careless and lose this opportunity as the Eternal Recovery Light wouldn't be able to annihilate all of the monsters in that den.

I used a short teleportation spell to enter the protection of Ke Er Lan Di and the troops. The injured crowd was already affected by the treatment of their pain and recovery of their powers. I said seriously, "Ke Er, please help by guarding me for a while. I'll exterminate them all at once."

My voice woke Ke Er Lan Di from his stupor. He looked at me with respect and reverence. I slightly nodded towards him before instantly crouching on the ground, using the back of Sukrad's staff to draw lines in the ground. A complicated rune rapidly appeared on the ground from my drawings. A medium sized magic array appeared at the center of the defensive line. This was an assistance magic array that could rapidly increase the user's powers. However, it had a negative side effect. The attraction of the elements wouldn't be orderly; when absorbing the elements it wouldn't just be of a single type, so the caster would have difficulty in controlling the spell. It was just to use its power to achieve your objective. After using it, my cultivation would fall drastically but I didn't consider it much because my fusion powers should be able to convert those elements. Anyway, the drop in my cultivation wasn't really something I could control, due to needing the power of the array.

I took in a deep breath and started to float above the magic array. With both my eyes closed, I coaxed the fusion powers in my body to enter the magic array. The magic array momentarily gave off intense light as it shone with constant great flashes of magic. The countless magic elements in the surroundings, especially the unceasing light rain, rapidly gathered around me as its center. The monsters on the ground had already disappeared, since the light rain was still going, there wasn't any movement from the hole.

Wave after wave of power surged from all directions towards me. Light

elements made up the majority, yet various other elements came as well. The moment I started to absorb the powers, a feeling of fear crept in my head, I was too careless. If it wasn't for the Eternal Recovery Light that eliminated the deathly aura, my assistance magic array would have absorbed those deathly energies into my body. I wouldn't be able to activate the Holy Sword's power then, nor would my body be able to withstand it. I definitely couldn't make the same mistake, the danger was too great. The thought made me break out into a cold sweat.

Luckily, my trial and error worked out fine. Countless powers were being absorbed into my body. The three dim gold dans were constantly solidifying. I had absorbed half of the power from a forbidden spell, which were my light element friends, born from the power of heaven and earth. My power returned back to its peak state after a moment. I was elated as it seemed that the side effect of using that magic array wouldn't appear. The effect of using this magic array, coupled with the Eternal Recovery Light, wasn't bad.

Power was constantly absorbed by me. The forbidden spell was already getting weaker as the light rain had become much smaller. As the effects of the forbidden spell were vanishing, the powers in my body had already changed into golden liquid, constantly revolving and surrounding the three gold dans. My cultivation seemed to have increased! Under my will, the tremendous fusion power surged to my chest and the silver Holy Sword let out a brief burst of intense light from my body. I yelled with confidence, "The God King bestowed upon me the Radiant Holy Sword. It shall shine with the soaring radiance from the vault of the heavens."

The fusion power in my body rapidly converting to the Holy Sword's divine aura. The six light wings that disappeared before reemerged again from my back. My entire body shuddered as the silver Holy Sword left my body. Its size was much larger and it silently floated in front of me. I could clearly feel that I could completely control the power before me.

# Chapter 14: Destroying the Monster Hole

“Ke Er, quickly bring everyone to retreat. I’m going to eliminate this sinister hole.”

Ke Er Lan Di was astonished when he saw the Holy Sword before me, he wasn’t able to react for a moment.

I anxiously said, “Quickly go! There may be a huge explosion when it happens.”

Ke Er Lan Di was abruptly woken up from his shocked state. He then led his 18 subordinates, that had already recovered due to the light rain, to leave the area. I heaved a sigh of relief and focused on the hole in front of me. The light rain had already disappeared, so the sinister aura was constantly brewing again from the hole. I knew that the monsters would emerge again. I raised the Sukrad’s staff in my hand and inserted my fusion power into it, causing light rays to intensely shine from the enormous transparent gemstone at the head of the staff. The Holy Sword once again got larger and flew towards the top of the hole. Under my control, I willed the Holy Sword that constantly emitted silver divine aura to point downwards towards the center of the hole. I narrowed my eyes and circulated the power of the Holy Sword’s power to my very limit before shouting, “Go to hell!”

When the Sukrad’s staff was brandished downwards, the Holy Sword, carrying its silver aura, suddenly disappeared into the hole. Numerous mournful shrieks could be heard, shaking the heavens and earth. The ground started to quiver constantly. I focused and rapidly teleported 100 meters away. As I disappeared, the hole suddenly erupted. After the large explosion was heard, the plains, along with 10 meters of the forest, was completely blown away. The remains of soil and plants were constantly raining down in the air. The Monster aura had completely vanished after the silver flash reached the hole.

I brandished Sukrad’s Staff to withdraw the Holy Sword immediately. The light ray from the Holy Sword was clearly much dimmer after releasing its tremendous power. I took in a deep breath and erased the

magic array that I had previously arranged and inserted the powers from my body back into the Holy Sword. I didn't move to leave as I was waiting for the main leader of the hole to emerge. The previous experience was still fresh in my memory. I didn't know if there was anything remaining in the hole, but if there was, I would annihilate all sinister beings without second thoughts.

My judgement was correct. There were two black specters that floated out from the hole shortly afterwards. I snorted coldly and brandished the Sukrad's staff in my hand to restrain those two specters. Perhaps they were previously severely damaged by the Holy Sword, as they were unexpectedly caught easily. The two black specters were too suppressed to maintain their human form after being restrained. Those two people looked deathly. As they humanised, I was shocked because I knew them. One was Si Feng Ri, the continent's magister and the leader of the Ri Family's leader in the Kingdom of Aixia. While the other was his grandson, Hai Shui's previous boyfriend, Feng Liang Ri. Even though their appearances didn't change, their auras were just like when Li Si Dun Wei Bo and I had previously met. They were also dressed in the same fashion.

Si Feng Ri and Feng Liang Ri glared viciously at me. Feng Liang Ri had already lost an arm. The both of them showed a sorry figure as grey fluids were constantly flowing from their mouths and noses. I felt that they were no longer a threat to me with their current powers, especially since the Holy Sword's power having already severely injured them.

"You interrupted our great matters again." Si Feng Ri said with hatred.

I sighed. "Leader of the Ri family, is this really worth the trouble? Your position in the Kingdom of Aixia was so prestigious, so why did you help the Monster King harm the Human race? What benefit do you have in doing that?" It was extremely illogical as to why the leader of the Ri family, which was one of the three great families in the kingdom, had fallen into such a sorry state.

The deathly aura was still constantly surging outwards, but due to his power deficiency, he was unable to break out from the restraints. "Zhang Gong Wei, you killed all of my clan members today. Just kill me. The Lord

Monster King will definitely not let you off for this. It'll be your death once he reappears in this world."

It seemed that the people leading this hole wasn't just the two of them, but the entire Ri family's clan. Despite that, they were still killed under my attacks, I felt upset because they were once humans and killing them wouldn't make me happy. However, I understood that Si Feng Ri and Feng Liang Ri could no longer turn back. If I was to forgive them, the Monster Race would simply have that much more power.

"Ri family head, the Monster Race is filled with detest and hatred that only knows how to invade and annihilate. If they were to take over the continent, the Human race would be exterminated. Is that really what you want to see?" Even though I knew that it was useless asking, I still couldn't beat the temptation.

Si Feng Ri snorted viciously. "That's right! That's exactly what I want to see. The Humans have lived for a long time, but how can they be compared to our Monster race? Ah!!!" Suddenly, his entire body's grey aura expanded and unexpectedly broke through the restraints on him, forming into a grey lighting that charged towards me.

I shook my head helplessly. The Holy Sword before me moved without my command to receive that blow. With a mournful shriek, Si Feng Ri's body vanished. I still killed him, even if I was unwilling. There was traces of fear in Feng Liang RI's eyes as he silently looked at me in a daze. I sullenly said, "Feng Liang, I won't let you go today. Do you have any last words?"

Feng Liang Ri's eyes suddenly cleared up. He said in a daze, "I don't know why I turned into this state. However, what more can I say for what has happened until now?! Please help me tell Hai Shui that initially, I really did love her. If there's a next life, I'll definitely treat her extremely well." Upon saying that, a sliver of sadness filled Feng Liang Ri's eyes. 'Hong!' His body suddenly expanded and exploded. His grey aura vanished into nothingness.

I withdrew the Holy Sword and descended to the ground. I looked

dazedly at where Feng Liang Ri had vanished. I wasn't the slightest bit happy, even after successfully annihilating all of the monsters here; sadness filled my heart instead. 'Feng Liang! Why did you do that? If you had come back to your senses, there really wasn't any guarantee that I'd kill you!'

## Chapter 15: Onward to the Stronhold

I awoke from my thoughts after a long while. I looked at the bottomless hole in front of me and chuckled wryly before heading towards the direction where Ke Er Lan Di had disappeared to.

It was unexpected that I hadn't used up a lot of my powers during the previously unexpected battle. I was even able to maintain better control over the Holy Sword instead. If one of the three Great Monsters were the ones that appeared, I wouldn't have dealt with this so easily. I doubt I would even be a match to any of those three great monsters. The Monster race had already started to stir. It looked like time was pressing so I needed to obtain the Radiant God's inheritance as soon as possible. The reemergence of the Monster King was nearing.

I lifted the hood that was covering my head and moved my long hair to my back. Currently, there wasn't a need to continue hiding my identity as I knew that Ke Er Lan Di and the rest had already figured out my identity!

When I flew to the main path, Ke Er Lan Di and the rest were already waiting for me. Ke Er Lan Di looked anxious, but when he saw me appear, he instantly became elated. He was stunned after seeing my scarred face. I chuckled wryly. "It's very shocking, right? This is how I truly look."

Ke Er Lan Di's face reddened. "Your name shouldn't be Eighteen, right?"

I nodded. "I think that you should have guessed that I'm Zhang Gong Wei. Just call me Zhang Gong."

Ke Er Lan Di's expression changed as he cried out, "You're really the God's Envoy, Child of Light, Zhang Gong Wei!"

I smiled wryly. "I don't need to hide my identity from you anymore. It was the Monster race's doing with that hole previously. If I didn't notice and eliminate it in time, there would have been a reign of terror that would occur nearby. You should now believe that the Monster race really exists, right?"

Ke Er Lan Di's expressed fear, which was probably when he thought back to what had happened. "You're right! The Monster race really exists.

That horrifying deathly aura was much more powerful than the Demon Beast from the Demon race. God's Envoy Zhang Gong, I hope that you won't hold what I said previously against me in your heart. I feel bad for trying to recruit you into join the army of the Kingdom of Dalu. I was really overestimating my capability. You're the most powerful mage that I've ever seen. The previous spell that you used should be a light element forbidden spell, right?"

"You're correct. The burden in using the light forbidden spell is very heavy on me. I've got an extremely important task to do in heading to the fort. The emergence of the Monster race pressures me greatly. I hope that your Kingdom of Dalu will make its preparations as soon as possible by training troops to deal with the major changes coming. Those previous monsters were of the lowest of standards. If the Monster King revives, I really don't know what will happen."

Ke Er Lan Di's eyes expressed resolution. "God Envoy Zhang Gong, rest assured. I'll definitely report what has happened today. We, the Kingdom of Dalu, will do our very best for the continent's peace and harmony." He must already have enough experience on the terror of the Monster race. I hoped that there would be more people like him that could understand my painstaking effort.

"Ke Er, I won't continue traveling with you as I need to save time to accomplish my task. We'll definitely meet up in the future."

Ke Er Lan Di replied heartedly, "I really look forward to battling along side with you."

I nodded and bid farewell to his subordinates, who were looking at me with reverence, before activating the divine powers in my body to carry me off in a white light. I flew into the night which had recovered its serenity.

I was currently burning with anxiety! According to what the God King had said, the Monster King would appear at least two years from now. However, the Monster race had already started to appear. There was a possibility that the Monster King would emerge earlier than expected as

well. If that was the case, it would have a great influence on the continent. I was deeply aware that my powers were insufficient. If I couldn't fully control the Holy Sword, it would be hard for me to pose a threat to the Monster King. I must receive the Radiant God's inheritance as quickly as I can, in order to have enough power to resist the Monster King. I was lacking time so I couldn't dally any further.

I previously wasn't in a rush, I simply had a shadow weighing on my heart. Mi Jia Lie had previously indicated that the inheritance wouldn't be easy, which made me slightly apprehensive. If the inheritance were to fail, I would probably disappear from the world. At that time, not only would I be unable to see my beloved Mu Zi, the entire continent would gradually fall into ruin by the appearance of the Monster race. I was merely a 20 year old human, how could I not be scared when facing death? However, I couldn't afford to consider that any further. I must do what is needed for the continent's peace and harmony, my family, and my friends.

I maximized my flight speed so the night wind would unceasingly hit my body. The icy feeling stimulated my mind, making my spirit to maintain its peak state. The scenery beneath me constantly flew by. I should be reaching the Ström Fortress soon with my current pace.

Dawn had already appeared. The sun had gradually risen from the horizon, shining warm light rays onto the world. I was already very exhausted after last night's battle and the entire day's flight. The Ström Fortress was already in view from a distance, so I decided to descend and take a break. I withdrew all of my powers and nimbly descended, landing on a hill, which was 100 meters in height, allowing me to see the scenery of my surroundings. There wasn't anything special around me, so I sat crossed legged as waves of exhaustion constantly infiltrated my body. I rapidly drew up a simple magic defense array before leaning on a large tree to gradually enter a dream state. I really didn't know where the God Rended Canyon was. I had already passed the fort several times, but still didn't see the God Rended Canyon. I needed to sustain all of my physical strength and magical powers.

The fusion powers in my body started to circulate slowly. While my consciousness faded, I constantly took in the light elements from my surroundings to recover my powers.

## Chapter 16: Stronghold Peddler

It was unknown how much time had passed when I gradually woke up. Nothing in my surroundings had changed. As I used my inner sight to check my body, I found that my fusion power had become noticeably stronger. The three gold dans in my body seemed to become more substantial, while they constantly absorbed the powers in my surroundings. My cultivation had not only returned to its normal state, but even seemed to have improved. This was definitely related to the magic gathering array from yesterday, and had nothing to do with my training.

I had gotten out of bed and started to exercise my muscles and bones. It seemed to be about noon, the sun had risen high up in the sky. I discovered that I had slept for an entire day. Circulating the fusion powers in my body, I soared up off the ground towards the Ström Fortress after putting on my cloak.

The fort was still the same. I could clearly see that there were numerous workers repairing the damage that we caused with our forbidden spell. The process wasn't quick so they would be busy for a while. Since I didn't know the exact position of the God Rended Canyon, I decided to head to the fort. The people there should have a better understanding for the surroundings of the fort than I do, so they might have some hints regarding the location of the canyon. It was much better than trying to find it randomly by myself. Thinking about that, I flew to a place that was a couple of meters from the fort. It was probably due to the success of the peace talks that the fortress security was extremely relaxed. There should be people patrolling, but I didn't see any of them today. There were only some merchants constantly coming and going.

I gradually walked towards the fort. The surroundings were very peaceful. I didn't know who was in charge of the fort after I left, since it had been a while. 'Forget it, I shall not disturb the leaders of the three kingdoms. If they knew of my arrival, there would be some trouble and I currently can't afford to dally!'

I slowly walked to the entrance as I pondered it. After reaching it, the number of people had obviously increased. The majority of them were importing construction materials, though I finally saw a few patrolling squads after entering the fort. They seemed to be from the Kingdoms of Dalu and Xiuda because I didn't see any mages from Aixia. Ma Ke should have ascended to the throne by now. I felt very comfortable with him leading the Kingdom of Aixia. With the teachers assisting him, the mage army of Aixia could only get stronger. I hoped that with the nurturing of light magicians by Teacher Di, it would be easier to deal with the emerging Monster race.

"Sir Mage, do you want to buy some magic stones?" A foreign voice sounded from a corner. I turned to look as it seemed to be a slightly shady middle aged man. He wore a long robe and wasn't tall as his height only reached to my chest. He was only slightly built, which was probably due to malnutrition. He timidly waved his hand at me.

I was moved and walked over. The skinny character said, "Sir Mage, do you want to buy some magic stones? It definitely will be a great help to your magic cultivation."

I inwardly sniggered. This fellow must have thought I was a low level mage. I currently wore a mage robe that didn't have any symbols, ever since I escaped from the Kingdom of Aixia. It looked as though I was a novice mage that hadn't been certified. He must have thought that I was cheap and foolish as he wanted to trick me with low-cost magic stones to get some money.

I shook my head. "I'm not interested in becoming a mage."

The slightly built man surveyed his surroundings before replying, "How about this? Just head to my place to have a look. My possessions aren't solely magic stones, there are also many other products for mages. Those goods are from the Kingdom of Aixia so many of them are items that are used in their mage army battalion. They are absolutely genuine goods with fair prices. You'll surely find a bargain. At first glance, you must be a high leveled mage. There's definitely something that you can use. Don't worry, I promise that I won't take much of your money, so want to come

with me to have a look?"

I nodded. "Alright, bring me there to have a look then."

A sliver of happiness flashed past that skinny man's eyes. He said to follow him before turning and walking into an alley. I followed him in his turns in corners and perplex directions to reach an unremarkable house. He surveyed his surroundings to check that there wasn't anyone around before opening the door and leading me inside.

The house wasn't big. I saw the various magic products that were on display after entering. There were magic robes, magic staffs, and other products. I could clearly feel the magic undulations emanating from these items with my advanced cultivation. It was within my expectations that they were just crude low level magic items. Even though they looked amazing, there wasn't any real content to any of them.

The skinny man rubbed his hands together. "Sir mage, please have a look. The items that I have here are great items!"

I smiled. "Do you have any other items? There's nothing that catches my eyes here."

The skinny man's expression changed. He looked stunned before constantly nodding in approval. "I have even better items, but their prices will be slightly more expensive."

I looked at him and replied, "Take them out and let me have a look. If there's anything that seems worth it, I'll consider buying them."

"Alright! Please wait for a moment." Upon saying that, he turned to walk further into the room. After a short moment, he carried a huge container with him. "Sir, these items are part of my collection. If it wasn't for you being a high leveled mage, I would have been reluctant to take it out. However, the pricing....."

I replied impatiently, "Just let me have a look before continuing this discussion."

"Alright, don't be anxious. Please have a look." That slightly built man slowly opened the container as he said that. There were a few magic

stones and a few small magic staves in there. It certainly was much better than those items outside, especially those small magic staves. The magic powers in them made them second rate weapons. However, there was a huge difference from what I had seen before. I took one of the staves to have a look. The skinny man said with praise, "You have a good eye, this is the best magic staff that I have. It can enable you to increase the releasing speed of your magic by 30% when you cast a spell."

I shook my head. '30%? It's already not bad for it to have a 5% increase. It's impossible for it to be compared to my Sukrad's staff. Moreover, I don't have any problem in the speed of releasing magic.' I placed the magic staff back. "Do you have any other items or are this all of your possessions?"

## Chapter 17: The Mysterious Mask

The slightly petite man frowned. "Sir, these are all high grade goods and are my personal collections!"

I shook my head, "I don't have much use for such items. If you don't have anything else, I'll leave now."

The slightly built man seemed to be unable to get guest for a long time so anxiousness flashed his eyes. "Please take a look at this. This is my top grade item." Upon saying that, he removed the lid wooden container, revealing an internal layer. There was something inside. It was as thin as paper and was faint silver in colour. It was something unknown to me, but I could indistinctively feel the tremendous power within it. It was unquestionably something extraordinary!

"What is this?" I asked.

The slightly built man replied, "I'm also not sure what it really is until now. I called it the Brave Mask. After wearing it, not only can it cover your appearance, it was also has an extremely good ventilation so you won't feel stuffy wearing it. I heard from others that this item contains tremendous amount of magic power. It's a treasure! How about this? If you want it, I can sell it cheaply to you."

Mask? I became interested. I picked the Brave Mask up. It was smooth to touch and didn't seem heavy. I couldn't make out what material it was made up of. I lowered my head and carefully applied it on my face. The mask automatically stuck to my face after I felt a cool feeling. A different feeling filled my entire body. My senses was stronger after putting on the mask. The power in the mask was being absorbed by the fusion power in my body, forming a link between them. The Holy Sword at my chest moved slightly, making warm powers to surge up into the mask. The mask instantly gave off a faint silver gold light ray. Only my nose and mouth was exposed by the mask. This item was great as it was quite useful to me. It could cover up my ugly face. There was divine powers within the mask's power. Was this a divine instrument?

The slightly built man asked anxiously, "How is it? What I said was accurate, right? Take a look, it gave off a light ray after you wore it. It must have recognised you as its owner."

I smiled. "I want this item. How much is it?"

The slightly built youth rubbed his hands together. "This....About this, I bought this item for 10,000 gold coins. Since you're so destined to be with it, I'll give you a 8% discount so I will take 8,000 from you. What do you think?"

I was stunned as I remembered that I didn't have much money on me. 8000 gold coins was undoubtedly a huge sum of money to me. However, I really liked this item so I replied, slightly embarrassed, "My apologies, but I currently don't have that much money."

When he heard that I didn't have much money, that slightly built man's expression changed. His previous fawning disappeared and a caustic appearance was shown instead. He extended his hand towards my face. "How can you be a mage without any money? Return that item to me. You've wasted my time." When he was three inches from my face, the mask suddenly flashed and rebounded his hand away from me.

The slightly built man fumed. "What? You want to steal my stuff? Quickly return it to me."

I replied awkwardly, "I really want this item. How about this? I substitute something for it."

The slightly built man coldly snorted. "You? With your shabby looks appearance, I doubt that you will have something good to exchange with me. Quickly return it to me. I'm not selling it."

"No, exchange it with the bag in his hand." A deep and low voice sounded from outside the house. A tall figure appeared outside the door. When I turned my head, I saw a middle age robust man. That person was taller than me. He was almost the same height as Big Brother Zhan Hu. He was wearing an ordinary warrior uniform. From his aura, he was quite skillful. With his vicious pair of eyes staring at me and fierce-looking appearance, he definitely wouldn't kindhearted.

The slightly built man said respectfully, “Big Brother, you’re back. This fellow wants to steal my item and has wasted most of my day.”

That robust man glared at him. “Didn’t I say to let him exchange the bag in his hand for that mask?” He turned towards me. “Are you going to exchange?”

How could I exchange Sukrad’s staff with him? I shook my head. “I can’t exchange using that. Why do you want my bag?”

That robust man snorted. “If I didn’t have such eyesight, I’ll have wasted my many years in making a business of selling and purchasing magic items. The thing in your bag should be a magic staff. I could feel the power coming from it when I was outside. It can be used to exchange for my Brave Mask.” My Sukrad’s staff was a Dragon God’s staff. I could exchange it from this mask with unknown powers, but how could I bear to exchange it? The Sukrad’s staff had an extremely good usage to me. With it, I could greatly improve the strength of the staff. I really love this mask. What shall I do? I used my inner version to look through the items in my space pocket to see if there was anything worth to exchange it with them. I discovered a thing while I was dreading.

“How about this? I can’t exchange my staff with you. But I can use another thing to exchange it with you. I guarantee that you won’t lose out. How about that?”

That robust man replied, “Take out that item to let me have a look. If it really is a good item, we can negotiate. But don’t you even think of tricking me. I know how much an item is worth with one glance. I’m a well-known treasure expert at the fort.”

I replied, in smiles, “Rest assured, I’ll definitely make you satisfied.” Upon saying that, I slash at the space to reach into my space pocket to retrieve an item.

The robust man was shocked. “Space magic? You’re really a high leveled mage?” Mages were extremely popular profession in the world. Those who were at least at the high leveled mage were extremely respected by people.

I didn't care about his shock and passed the item over to him. "I want to use this item to exchange with you. What do you think?" It was a scroll in my hand.

The slightly built man replied, "What is that? You want to exchange our treasure with a paper?"

## Chapter 18: New of the Canyon

I looked disdainfully at him, but didn't say anything. The robust man glared at the slightly built man to indicate him to be quiet before looking at me to ask me, "May I ask, Sir mage, what is the usage for this magic scroll?"

He had a better knowledge than the other. I said indifferently, "Life protection"

"Life protection? What's that?" The robust youth asked with slight amazed.

I explained, "It's an unfixed position escape scroll. When you are in danger, you can activate the chant to make you teleport to a randomly for a 5km distance. It can save your life at any crucial moment so it shouldn't be worse than your mask. You should know that nothing is more important than life. This escape scroll is the product of the top Magister in the world, Magister Chuan Song Zhen."

"Is this really Magister Chuan Song Zhen's product?" That robust man took the scroll over with excitement. The escape scroll had a faint space magic power so I was certain that he should be able to feel it.

I could easily create such magic scrolls now so it didn't have much use for me. Even though my space magic wasn't as good as my light magic, it should also be at the Magister level. I loved escaping skills after all. With safety as my number one motto, I couldn't refuse researching space magic.

The robust man still returned the item back to my hand after a long time, while shaking his head.

I asked, stunned, "Why? You don't believe that this is Magister Chuan Song Zhen's product?"

The robust man replied, "No, I believe you as a high leveled mage like you won't lie to me and also won't use Lord Chuan Song's name to swindle me. However, I find that this item isn't enough to exchange for my Brave Mask. I still want that magic staff in your hand."

I was stunned for a moment. “No, I can’t do that. This magic staff is a part of my life so I can’t freely exchange it. How about this? I’ll make you two more escape scrolls that have the same effect as this one. How about that? It should be useful for you to have three chances of escape. You should know that now the Monster race is threatening the world, it’s important to secure your life.”

The robust man smiled strangely. “Monster race? Even I’ve heard about them, I don’t fear them. This was the world’s most protected area, the Ström Fortress. Three escape scrolls is really attractive, and I also believe that you can manufacture such magic scrolls, but I don’t want those. There are two things that can be used for the exchange. First, it will be the magic staff in your hand. The other will be the method in creating a teleportation magic array. To be honest with you, I’m both a warrior and a mage. I practice space magic so it can be said that we are from the same line! Of course, my space magic will definitely have a disparity compared to yours.”

This fellow’s thought was really meticulous to want to learn how to produce an escape scroll! I contemplated before replying, “Alright, but I can only teach you the basics. You’ll have to rely on yourself to become better in using it.”

Perhaps, that robust man didn’t expect that I would agree so easily. He expressed a rare elated expression and immediately said, “Good! Great! Thank you so much. The mask is yours now. Little Three, you go out to be on a lookout. I want to learn some magic from this mage.”

The slightly built man, known as Little Three looked at me dubiously. He nodded. “Big Brother, he can’t be a swindler, right?”

I secretly thought, ‘I feel so wronged for me a God’s Envoy to be looked at as a swindler. If this is to be conveyed to everyone’s ears, won’t they laugh to death?’

“Stop bickering and get out.” Under the order of the robust man, the slightly built man reluctantly walked out.

I looked at the robust man in front of me and silently circulated my

fusion magic to feel his body's powers. This fellow really had a magic cultivation to have reached the advanced level mage. It was no wonder that he would ask me for the manufacturing method for the escape scrolls. I said calmly, "I'll show you how to produce the scroll three times. It'll depend on your own efforts as to how much you understand."

Upon saying that, I took out the items used in manufacturing the magic scroll and started explaining. I had done the first and second time fast, but did slower for the last. Three magic scrolls were completed in a short moment. I gave him three of the scrolls. "I'll give you three of these scrolls. With you current magic level, it'll be difficult for you to produce this strength of magic scroll. However, you can set shorter distances. It's best if you don't exceed one kilometer for it to succeed. You can try to make the distance further after your magic power has improved."

The robust man expressed respect. "Yes, Great Master. Thank you for your tutelage. I'll remember that."

I nodded. "The initial period of training for both magic and martial arts will have better results, but if you were to multitask, you wouldn't be able to reach the peak for either of them ever. You should just come to a decision."

The robust man smiled wryly. "I was indeed frivolous when I was young. I always thought that my physique was good and that I could master both powers. But now, I understand. Even if it's already late, I'll unquestionably listen to your advice. Thank you for teaching me the manufacturing of the scroll. I'll definitely work hard. May I ask for your name?"

I looked at him. "If that's the case, can I ask you a question? If you can answer, I'll tell you my name."

The robust man nodded. "Alright, please state the question."

"I heard from someone that there's a God Rended Canyon in front of the fort. Do you know where it is?"

After hearing what I said, the robust man was stunned. "God Rended Canyon? I seem to have heard of it before. Let me think about it." I lowered his head, trap with thoughts.

He had heard of it? I was elated. If he knew, it really wasn't a wasted effort coming here and it had cut down the time for me to randomly search for it.

After a long time, the robust man raised his head. "I certainly have heard of that place. It seems to be at a plateau at the Demon race territory, which has a large fissure there. It's located quite a distance from the fort and seems to be towards the South. You can start by searching from there."

## Chapter 19: Crafty and Unruly Girl

I was elated. It would be much easier for me to have a rough idea of the direction. “Thank you. I’ll take my leave now.” After saying that, I headed out the door.

The robust man replied anxiously, stunned, “You haven’t yet told me who you are.”

I smiled at him and the mask conveying my expression. “Be diligent in training your space magic. It’ll definitely be useful in the future. I’m Zhang Gong Wei. Farewell.” Upon saying that, I circulated the fusion power in my body and used short teleportation spell to disappear, leaving the startled robust man behind.

“Zhang Gong Wei? Zhang Gong Wei? It seems so familiar! Ah! God’s Envoy, Zhang Gong Wei!” The robust man cried out.

Little Three ran inside. “Big Brother, what’s wrong?”

The robust man replied, trembling, “Just now....Just now that person was unexpectedly God’s Envoy, Zhang Gong Wei.”

.....

I repeatedly used short teleportations to reach the thick wall of the fort quickly. ‘The southern plateau at the Demon race? En! It’s much easier to find the place now.’ With excitement, I walked directly towards the city entrance. The entrance was shut as per usual. How was I going to head out? Short teleportation couldn’t pass through that thick a city wall. Under the circumstances where I didn’t expose my identity, the guards of the fort would probably not open the entrance for me. Heading out seemed to be a little difficult. The magic cannons at the top of the city walls weren’t weak. I couldn’t just fly out and be targeted like an unknown flying creature.

While I pondered awhile, I really didn’t come up with any good methods. I also didn’t want to waste any more time. It seemed that I could only use a short teleportation array.

Thinking about that, I found a dilapidated corner and started to carve the short teleportation spell. With my power, it took an instant to draw up the teleportation array. Just as I wanted to activate the teleportation array after setting the position, I heard someone shout. “Don’t run! What do you think you’re doing?”

I was stunned for a moment, and in that moment, a black shadow charged over. I focused and saw that it was a girl dressed in black attire. Since her speed was quick, her flowing hair covered her face, making it impossible for me to see her appearance clearly. But with such a well developed body and so much energy, it should be a young lady.

While I was in a daze, she had already ran near me. It was a dead end behind me and the girl also discovered this. When her long hair cleared from her face, she was showing a panicked expression. She was such a beautiful girl. Her age should be about the same as mine, as I expected. Her skin was creamy white, with large eyes filled with terror. There were a couple of warriors that came from behind her. They didn’t follow the army’s regulations. They were undoubtedly up to no good chasing after a weak girl. ‘Sigh! I think I’ll help her out.’

When the girl ran to my side, I rapidly activated the teleportation array. With the flash of light, we disappeared at the same time. Since I was afraid that she would be harmed during the warping of space, I embraced her supple waist and used my fusion power to protect her, but the girl screamed in fright.

After the light flashed, we already appeared in the plains outside the Ström Fortress. The teleportation spell only had a 3 kilometer range so the lion-like fort was behind us. I was shocked to discover that we were constantly descending. The location that I had set was the huge crevice that was created by our forbidden spell. This was like being caught in a trap that I had set! I shouted and gathered the powers in my body. Forcefully, I stopped our descent by brandishing Sukrad’s staff. We were sent back up to the edge of the crevice by circulating the wind elements in the surrounding area to cast a wind spell.

The young girl reacted after standing on solid ground. She protested

coquettishly, "Let go of me."

I was stunned before realizing that my arm was still around her waist. I smiled wryly before releasing my arm, retreating two steps back.

The girl patted her generous chest and panting profusely. The twin peaks on her chest quivered with each breath. An astonishing force of lust rushed in my mind. With my face flushed, I couldn't bear it any longer and had to look away. I was lucky that my new mask hid my expression so she didn't realise the awkwardness.

After a while, the young girl asked, "Who are you?" Her voice was crisp and extremely sweet-sounding.

I smiled wryly. "I'm the person that saved you. Young Miss, why were you being chased by those guys?"

The young girl snorted. "What's it to you? Mind your own business! It should be fine now, but I've gone outside of the fort. How am I supposed to get back?"

I was dazed for a moment as I had saved her, but she blamed me instead. It really was illogical. 'Mu Zi is the best as she was much gentler. Forget it, since I saved her already. I also didn't expect to be rewarded. I've got to leave this place as soon as possible. It's very close to the fort, making it easy for me to be spotted.' Thinking about that, I turned to walk towards the south.

After walking for a few steps, that girl sounded from behind me. "Hey! Are you just going to walk away?"

I frowned and asked with my back facing her, "What else do you want?"

That young girl replied overbearingly, "Since you have brought me out, you should send me back in."

Hearing her arrogant words, I got annoyed so I coldly replied, "I only know how to exit. You just have to think of your own way to enter. You're human anyways. You just have to shout in front of the entrance of the fort." I was kind to save her, but she used such an attitude towards me so I wasn't going to care for her! Moreover, what I said was the truth. It

wouldn't be a problem for her to enter the fort after proving that she was human.

I rapidly stepped forward, analyzing the terrain before me as I tried to see where the God Rended Canyon would be.

"Hey! Hey! Masked person, stop!" Footsteps sounded as that young girl hastily went in front of me and extended her arms to hinder my path. While glaring at me, she shouted, "I'm a girl and you're a guy. Why don't you act like a gentlemen?"

I said calmly, "Act like a gentlemen? It depends on whom I'm talking to. I don't think it's necessary for such an unreasonable girl like yourself. It seems that I really shouldn't have saved you. Move aside. I've matters to attend to." I used a short teleportation to teleport 100m behind her and continued to head south as I didn't want her to continue bothering me.

## Chapter 20: Disciple? Princess?

“Aiyo!” I turned back to where I heard the sound and saw that the girl had fallen to the ground. She seemed to have tripped. I couldn’t help but head back to her due to my principles.

“What’s wrong?”

“Such a nonsensical question, can’t you see that I’ve tripped? Why aren’t you coming to support me?” The girl rebuked furiously.

I didn’t want to have any physical contact with her so I cast a fusion power to help her up. She didn’t seem to have any injuries, excluding that her tattered clothes. My worries were unfounded.

“Miss, please take note of where you’re going.” Upon saying that, I headed to the south again.

“Masked person!” She shouted from behind me, but she wasn’t as arrogant as before since her voice was gentle and grieving. My heart was softest towards girls so I stopped and asked, “What’s wrong again?”

The young girl looked at me, feeling wronged. “Can you please take me back or take me along with you? Where are you heading?”

I frowned as I was going to receive the Radiant God’s inheritance so how could I bring a hot tempered girl along? I wasn’t even sure if I could return from getting the inheritance. “Can you first tell me who you are and why those guys were chasing after you?”

The young girl pouted. “You want to know who am I?”

I nodded.

That young girl smiled strangely. “I refuse to tell you then. You’re going to toss me aside anyways. Who called you to bring me out from the Ström Fortress? You should be a space elemental mage. Can you tutor me? I’ve always liked space magic. I’m also an advanced space elemental mage.”

An advanced mage? How could I not see her actual skills? The magic power around her body was faint so she couldn’t even be at the intermediate level.

It was perhaps my dubious eyes that hurt her pride. She snorted and whispered her chant, causing her to disappear from her position to appear on my left side. “How’s that? You should be able to believe me now. My space magic isn’t bad.”

Seeing her confident appearance, I couldn’t help but laugh. Her short distance teleportation was terrible. It was almost at the level where I started to learn magic. There weren’t any good points about it, excluding being able to forcefully get the positioning of the spell right. Not to mention her slow speed in casting the spell, I knew that her magic was extremely weak from her pale complexion.

“Miss, I’m afraid that you should be at the elementary magic level.”

The young girl rebuked, “Nonsense, people from the palace...I mean from home had told me that I’m at the advanced mage level.”

‘Palace? What palace? Could it be.....’ I got increasingly curious as I thought about that. “How can you be an advanced space mage with only that short teleportation? Let me ask you then, do you know any offensive space spells?”

The young girl was stunned by my question as she muttered, “Space magic also has offensive spells? Why haven’t I heard about that?”

‘Goodness, It seems that not only her cultivation is weak, her knowledge is also....I’ve vaguely guessed that that girl should be a noble’s daughter. Otherwise, why is she so haughty?’ Thinking about that, I said, “Take a look at this. This is space offensive magic spell” Upon saying that, I brandished my hand, casting a small dimensional slash. There was momentarily a crack in space and was pulling everything towards it. The surrounding rocks and sand were sucked in. The young girl didn’t stand stable so she fell towards the small dimensional slash while screaming in fright.

I waved my hand again to cast a light restriction array to hold her body in place. “How’s that? You should know what a space offensive spell is now. Alright, you should head back to the city. I believe that your family will be searching anxiously for you now. Farewell!” I turned to walk away

after saying that.

That young girl suddenly wailed loudly.

My patience was already reaching its limit. I turned back and asked, “Miss, what’s the matter again?”

The young girl looked at me, feeling wronged. “I...I can’t move.”

I instantly understood and berated myself as I actually forgot to undo the light restriction spell due to being in a rush. How could she break out from it with her magic power? I withdrew the light restriction spell. “Alright, you should be able to move now.”

That young girl suddenly knelt to the ground and said seriously, “Teacher, please accept me as your disciple. I want to be under your guidance.”

I was stunned. ‘Becoming her teacher? That’s impossible, I will be annoyed until death by her after accepting her as a disciple.’ I shook my head. “Forget it, my magic level isn’t high enough to accept disciples. Please seek tutelage from someone else.”

The young girl replied firmly, “No! I want to be only under your guidance as no one had been willing to teach me magic. I was only fortunate to meet with you, an expert in space magic, today. You must accept me. Teacher, I’m obedient and will pay you for your guidance. My pay is extremely high.”

I chuckled. ‘She actually wants to move me with money? I bet that nobody is willing to teach her due to her ‘obedient’ attitude.’

I cast a power to support her body up. “Miss, don’t call me your teacher. I really have something important to do. You should head back to the fort now.”

The young girl stubbornly replied, “No, if you don’t accept me, I’ll jump down from here.” Upon saying that, she immediately walked to the edge of the precipice.

I smiled. “I won’t accept you even if you were to jump.”

The young girl fumed. "Alright, you're the one that causes my death then." After saying that, she really jumped, heading into the gulf. I jumped up in shock as I didn't expect her to be so staunch. I hastily brandished Sukrad's staff to cast a light spell to bring her back up. "What do you think you're doing? How can you treat your life so lightly?"

The young girl looked at me with hatred and with reddened eye rims, she replied, choked with her emotions, "You bully me. All of you bully me. You should just let me die."

'I've got a headache! Why did I meddle in someone's business and land myself in such a situation?'

The young girl said pitifully, "Teacher, you want to know my identity? I will let you know."

I was stunned as I didn't expect her to voluntarily tell me. It wouldn't hurt to listen so I nodded towards her.

## Chapter 21: Blocking the Enemy for the Disciple

The young girl sighed. "Teacher, I'm Fei Yu Luo Chen and my father is the Emperor of the Kingdom of Dalu."

Even though I had guessed that her status was extraordinary, I couldn't help but to be startled by her words. I never expected that she would be a princess from the top Kingdom amongst the human kingdoms.

The young girl continued, "Even though I'm born from the palace, I don't feel blessed at all! My Mother was a concubine of my Imperial Father. Since my Father has been doting on her most of the time, she was despised by the other concubines. Recently, one of my Father's concubine framed my Mother. Under my fury, I severely beat her up. I knew that I was in big trouble as that concubine's Brother was one of the major officials in the court. I ran away due to the fear of being punished. Just when I ran to the fort not long ago, I was found by my pursuers today. If you didn't save me, I'd have been caught and brought back to the palace by them. I know my temper isn't good, I admit that, but it was forced by them! I needed to protect my Mother since I was young, how could I not be fierce? Teacher, I really can't head back now. If I was to call out at the entrance of the fort, I'd definitely be caught by them. Teacher, can you please help me? I'm begging you." Upon saying that, her tears flowed, dampening her clothes.

So, her experiences were so pitiful. My heart also wasn't made of stone so I sobbed along with her. Fei Yu said sobbing, "Teacher, please let me to join you in your journey. If not, I'll be caught by them and be beaten to death. My Father is far from the capital so he definitely won't be able to save me. You can't just leave me in such a state, right?!"

I was plagued by difficulty as her situation was really sympathetic, but I was heading to receive the Radiant God's inheritance now so how could I bring this troublesome girl along with me?

At this moment, the entrance of the Ström Fortress suddenly opened. A thousand cavalrymen charged towards us like lightning. I was shocked and when I looked at Fei Yu, she had already hidden behind me. "Teacher,

they must be coming to catch me. You must help me!"

Those cavalrymen were already in front of us in a short moment. The leader of the squad aimed his gun at me and yelled, "Who are you to kidnap our house's lady?!"

I was stunned and looked back to Fei Yu. She hastily explained, "Teacher, don't listen to their lies! They just don't want you to interrupt their mission in capturing me." Seeing her anxious appearance, I couldn't help but to believe her.

I asked the leader, "And who are you?"

The leader replied, "I'm the team leader of the First Division in the Army of the Kingdom of Dalu. Quickly let go of my house's lady. Otherwise, don't blame us for being impolite."

Hearing his arrogant words, I instantly fumed and coldly snorted, "I'll have to see your capability in how you will deal with me then. Fei Yu is my disciple. Don't even imagine taking her away from me."

That leader laughed heartily as he said in distain, "You think you're capable in being our Young Miss's teacher? Everyone, attack! I want to see how capable this mad person is and take note of the Miss's safety."

I passed Sukrad's staff to Fei Yu. "Help me to hold onto this while I deal with them."

Fei Yu elatedly took the Sukrad's staff, but she didn't expect it to be so heavy. Her hands were weighted down and she almost dropped the staff. "Teacher, your staff is so heavy! Please don't kill them. It's sufficient to just teach them a lesson."

This girl still had such a kind hearted side, which made me develop a liking towards her. I nodded. The cavalrymen had already dismounted from their horses by the time I stepped forward a few steps. More than 100 of them charged to surround us. The skills of those cavalrymen weren't bad. They were worthy of being Imperial Guards. It was a pity that they were serving a tyrant.

"Imbecile!" The leader, who was carrying a long spear, charged forth

like lightning with the tip of the spear infused with battle spirit aiming to pierce it through my chest. It seemed that he was fearful of my magic! I moved slightly to the side, dodging the long spear that was coming my way. I shouted at Fei Yu, "Take a look! This is space magic." With the sway of my body, it formed 10 clones, surrounding the leader of the squad.

That leader was astonished as it was beyond his expectation that I could easily cast spells. His long spear turned into pointed stars, piercing towards the silhouettes surrounding him.

I snorted coldly. The 10 silhouettes moved in harmony and with the wave of my hand, I cast a small dimensional slash towards my opponent. The power from the tear of space momentarily clashed against the battle spirit of the long spear, giving off a loud sound, sending the leader flying.

That leader indeed has some skills, the strength of his battle spirit wasn't weak. He should be at the Heaven Knight level, which should be about Ke Er Lan Di's level. It was no wonder why he was so arrogant in this case.

Seeing their leader getting hurt, the rest of the cavalrymen instantly charged towards me. They were all using the cavalry's long spear so in a short moment, 7 spears aimed for my head, 6 spears aimed at my lower body and 13 spears pierced directly at me.

I coldly snorted as my fusion power surged out from my body, immediately forming a protective shield around me so all the spears were stopped. I yelled heavily, "Go away!" With the release of my power, thirteen cavalrymen were instantly blown away by the impact.

I used short distance teleportation to reach Fei Yu's side. "You continued to have no sense of propriety so don't blame me for being rude." Upon saying, I raised my right hand, which resulted to the light elements charging towards the sky, forming a 10 metre long light blade in my hand.

The leader looked at me in fright. "You...Who are you?"

I smiled. "I'm a mage. Return to your master and tell him that if he continues to trouble Fei Yu, I'll find him for a talk." I brandished the light

blade after my declaration. With a loud explosion, there was an extremely deep ditch that appeared in the ground beside me. I embraced Fei Yu's waist as I soared towards the sky towards and the other side of the gulf.

Fei Yu was so frightened that she closed her eyes and buried her head in my chest. I momentarily felt weird with her voluptuous figure sticking so close to my body, but I increased the our speed after collecting my thoughts. It seemed that I wouldn't be able to ditch this burden any time soon. I didn't have any choice but to bring her along as it was really impossible to just leave a girl here.

# Chapter 22: Dalu's King

The Commander's Division at the Ström Fortress

"Reporting! Viscount Ke Er Lan Di requests a meeting."

A heavy and domineering voiced sounded, "Let him in."

Clad in silver armour Ke Er Lan Di, with a worry filled expression, walked into the Interim Marshall's Manor quickly.

"Your Subordinate, Ke Er Lan Di, greets Your Majesty." Ke Er Lan Di knelt to the ground as he looked at the lofty middle aged man. He was the current Emperor of Dalu, Tian Feng Luo Chen. Tian Feng Luo Chen was about 1.9 meters tall, with a broad shoulders. Even though he was already 50, his lower back was still straight. He seemed to be dreading something as his resolute appearance now had furrowed eyebrows.

"Ke Er, you come at the right time. I've got a troubling matter for you to solve."

Ke Er Lan Di replied respectfully, "Please state your order, Your Majesty."

Tian Feng Luo Chen sighed. "I've come to the Ström Fortress for an inspection. Everything has been going well until Fei Yu suddenly went missing. I dispatched men after her, but there are still no results. I dote on her the most among all my children. It can be said that I'm to blame, she said that she was getting bored, but I didn't pay any attention to her. I want you to take 18 cavalrymen along with you to find her and bring her back."

Helplessness flashed in Ke Er Lan Di's eyes. He had got in contact with Princess Fei Yu many times already. Her willfulness had given him a headache. He pondered before replying, "Your Majesty, I've got a crucial report to relay to you before I head out to find the princess."

Tian Feng Tian Chen nodded. "You may stand and report."

Ke Er Lan Di sighed before telling everything from meeting the God's Envoy, Zhang Gong Wei, and the incident of fighting against the Monster

race. When he reported about Zhang Gong's peerless magic, he expressed admiration and wistfulness.

After hearing Ke Er Lan Di's report, Tian Feng Luo Chen expression changed. "So everything is real. The Monster race really is threatening the peace and harmony of the world. It looks like I didn't pay enough attention to it and Marshall Feng Hao was forcefully dismissed from his position due to my greed. Sigh! Everything is my fault! Our Kingdom of Dalu must really start to train up our armies. Someone attend to me!"

"Your Majesty!" The soldier that received the order respectfully knelt.

Tian Feng Luo Chen said resolutely, "Pass down my order to gather all of the mages in the kingdom, especially light mages, to form the First Division Mage Army force. Every mage that joins the Mage Army Union will be given twice the wages, according to their magic powers. (The Kingdom of Dalu was the same as the Kingdom of Xiuda in having a lack of mages. Otherwise, Tian Feng Luo Chen wouldn't have been moved by Ke Zha that day.) Similarly, order the First to Seventh Divisions of the Army troops to gather at the city's outskirts. They will be under the leadership of the head of the Kingdom's Protector Squad, Ai Er Zha. And tell the Commander in Chief of the Army to implement the Eagle Training Project."

After hearing Tian Feng's words, Ke Er Lan Di couldn't help but be startled. He had heard of the Eagle Training Project long ago. It was a regime that contained an extremely brutal training course. Initially, when it had been drawn up, it hadn't been implemented due to its brutality. Those divisions of the army troops that were just dispatched by Tian Feng were the most elite troops in the armed forces. They were equivalent to half of the kingdom's force. In addition to the newly assembled Mage Army Union, it seemed that the wise emperor, Tian Feng Luo Chen, had become serious.

"Yes, Your Majesty!" That soldier withdrew.

Tian Feng Luo Chen told Ke Er Lan Di, "Ke Er, you're the most elite among the elites in my Kingdom's new generation and are also a royal.

I've great expectations of you. I'll pass the leadership of the Royal Guardian Battalion troop to you. Please don't let me down!"

Ke Er Lan Di instantly became overjoyed as the Royal Guardian Battalion troop was made up of 50,000 elite soldiers. That division was the most elite among all of the other troops in the Kingdom of Dalu. Tian Feng Luo Chen had just passed the leadership of that division to him. This was an extremely important duty as he had been directly passed on the responsibility of guarding Tian Feng Luo Chen. Marshall Feng Hao had also been assigned to this position before he slowly climbed up to the Marshall's position.

Ke Er Lan Di excitedly knelt again. "Thank you for Your Majesty's bestowment."

Tian Feng Luo Chen said, "En! You're now to immediately find my daughter and bring her back. I'll personally supervise commencement of the Eagle Training Project."

Just as Ke Er Lan Di wanted to agree, there were hurried steps coming from outside. "Reporting!" A soldier frantically ran in and knelt as he reported loudly, "Reporting to Your Majesty, we had just gotten the location of the princess."

Tian Feng expressed happiness. "Quickly tell me where she is!"

"Originally, the Guardian Battalion would have already caught the princess, but there was a mage that suddenly appeared. The mage used a short distance teleportation to take her away, resulting in our loss of the target. Following that, the leader that was guarding the city discovered them and immediately dispatched light cavalry after them. It was until they chased them as far as the Miracle place (The gulf that was created from the forbidden spell was known as the Miracle among the three kingdoms.) that they caught up with them. But the mage's magic was extremely powerful. He also declared that he was the princess's teacher. Our troops realised that we weren't a match for him after a short tussle with him. After the mage defeated the leader of the squad, he took the princess to the other side of the Miracle place, making it impossible to

continue pursuing them.”

After Tian Feng listened to the report, he instantly fumed. “What?! A thousand cavalrymen couldn’t deal with a single mage? Why were you even born in y kingdom?”

That soldier didn’t dare to reply. A glimmer flashed past Ke Er Lan Di’s eyes. “What did that mage look like?”

That soldier answered. “That mage was lean and was wearing a white mage robe. His head was covered by a hood and donned a silver mask on his face. He also had a long clothed package in his hand.”

Ke Er Lan Di frowned. “Silver mask?”

Tian Feng Luo Chen replied, “What? Ke Er, you know him?”

## Chapter 23: Embarrassed

Ke Er Lan Di politely replied, “Your Majesty, aside from the silver mask, the rest of the mage’s appearance matched up with God’s Envoy Zhang Gong when we met. Moreover, when we had split up, he said that his destination was the Ström Fortress and that he had something important to settle. I didn’t tell him that Your Majesty was here. We then sped up to reach here faster. I wanted to introduce him to you before he settled his matters. Zhang Gong definitely isn’t simple, his magic level has reached the pinnacle of perfection. He alone was able to solitarily cast a forbidden spell! If her Royal Highness is really with him, there shouldn’t be any danger as Zhang Gong is a very righteous person.” He raised his head to look at Tian Feng Lou Chen, who seemed to be deep in thought. “I’m afraid that it’s Zhang Gong that will be in trouble.” Thinking about the obstinate ill-behaved Princess Fei Yu, Ke Er Lan Di started to have a headache.

Tian Feng Luo Chen asked the soldier, “Are you certain that mage said that he was Fei Yu’s teacher?”

That soldier said with fear and trepidation, “Yes, Your Majesty. I am certain.”

Tian Feng Luo Chen turned towards Ke Er Lan Di. “Since that’s the case, you bring along the Eight Magical Swords to find them. If that person really is God’s Envoy, Zhang Gong, you are not allowed to get into conflict with him. If Fei Yu really doesn’t want to return, you can just let her be.”

“What?!” Ke Er Lan Di cried out. Emperor Tian Feng actually allowed his daughter to follow an unfamiliar man.

A glimmer flashed in Tian Feng Luo Chen’s eyes. “Just do as I’ve said! You can take your leave now.”

“Yes, Your Majesty.” Ke Er Lan Di turned around to leave the Commander’s Division. Eight shadows leapt out from a corner and followed him out.

.....

I brought Fei Yu along as I flew towards the south. We had already reached the plateau of the Demon race after flying for a while. We should now just search towards the south, according to the directions of that robust man at the fort, to be able to find the God Rended Canyon.

When I landed, I circulated the Holy Sword's power to investigate my surroundings to check if there was any presence of abnormality. Fei Yu gushed, "Teacher, the feeling of flying is so great! When will you be teaching me how to fly?"

I smiled wryly. "Do you think it's that easy to fly? Without a solid magic foundation, it's impossible to fly. According to your current level, you'll need to bitterly train for 10 years before you can fly. Under no special conditions, you're most likely unable to fly."

Fei Yu replied, displeased, "Don't care! I want to be able to fly now. You must make me to be able to fly, alright?"

I shook my head. "There' three situations to help you to fly. The first is that your battle spirit reaches a certain level that enables you to explode out with battle spirit that will allow you to escape the pull of gravity, but that way of flight takes up a lot of energy. The second is to increase your magic level to be able to control the wind elements thus enabling you to fly. The third is....."

Fei Yu asked anxiously, "What's the third way?"

I couldn't help but to think of Xiao Jin that was guarding the far away God Protector's Domain. I sighed and replied, "The third way is to have a flying type Magical Beast to allow you to fly under its assistance." Xiao Jin was the King of Magical Beasts. It had been a long time since I had seen a Magical Beast after these years with my brothers that specialized in battle spirit. Initially, if it wasn't for Big Brother Hai Ri's red tiger that almost killed Xiao Jin, we wouldn't have reached such an intimate relationship. 'Xiao Jin! Are you missing me right now?'

Fei Yu chuckled. "Magical Beast? I have one! Take a look at this. Soaring Feather! I choose you."

To my astonishment, Fei Yu formed a hand seal towards the sky. A

white light shone from her hand and a hexagonal boundary appeared in the sky. ‘Ah! This was the way of summoning life-sealed beast!’ With a flash of light, the magic elements in the surrounding suddenly became chaotic. A snow white little bird appeared from the hexagonal boundary with a clear chirp, landing on Fei Yu’s shoulder.

The white bird was about 3.3 meters long and was covered with snow-white feathers. Two of its red eyes looked at me with curiosity. There was also a small golden horn on its head, its body giving off weak power.

My heart was moved as I cried out, “A Growth Type Magical Beast!” Fei Yu was really worthy of being the princess from the Kingdom of Dalu to actually possess a Growth Type Magical Beast. I could clearly feel the aura from its body, even if I didn’t know what type of white bird it was. Even though its power wasn’t at its full potential, it definitely would be a low grade Growth Type Magical Beast.

Fei Yu said, slightly complacent, “How is it? This is my Magical Beast. It’s called Little Feather. Teacher, you said it can help to let me fly?”

I gradually recovered from my shocked state. “Your Magical Beast is at the low grade level. Since it’s a Growth Type Magical Beast, its power will slowly improve according to your cultivation so if you want it to allow you to fly, you must train your powers. It currently can’t fully display its power.”

Fei Yu pouted as she gently caressed Little Feather’s snow-white wings. “How long will that take? Teacher, since your magic is so powerful, don’t you have a way to allow me to increase in my magic level in a short amount of time?”

I became serious. “Don’t you even think about that. Do you think training in magic is as easy as playing? Without bitter training, there won’t be any results. Fei Yu, I really got something important at hand so I can’t continue to take care of you. How about this then? I’ll use a slightly bigger teleportation array to teleport you into the city. You won’t be afraid of being caught by your pursuers from the Kingdom of Dalu that way.”

Fei Yu expression grew distressed as she said, choked with emotions, "Teacher....Teacher, you don't want me anymore? I'm so pitiful! I'm only a girl so what should I do when I meet with bad people? Teacher, please take me along with you. I'll obediently listen to you."

Hearing her pleas, I got a headache. 'Why did I meddle with such a troublesome girl?! How can I bring her along with me to accept the Radiant God's inheritance?'

## Chapter 24: Worldly View

“Fei Yu, what I’m going to settle is very dangerous. It’s better for you to not follow me.”

“I’m not scared of danger. Teacher, please let me stay. You were very cool when you beat off those pursuing soldiers! Teacher, how old are you this year?”

I scratched my head. “I’m about 20. Why are you asking this for?”

Fei Yu chuckled. “Teacher, you’re 20 and are so accomplished. You must have a secret method to increase your power, right? Please teach me. You’re treating me like an outsider. In that case, how about I become your wife so that you can teach me then?”

Her words frightened me. I immediately waved my hand. “No! No, how can that happen? I’ve already got a wife.” Mu Zi’s impeccable figure appeared before me, making my heart to race.

Fei Yu snorted. “You’re lying. You must hate me. You can go then. You don’t need to care about me. Hmph!” Upon saying that, she carried her Little Feather with her as she crouched, throwing off her Little Missy tantrum.

I sighed. “Fei Yu, I don’t hate you. How can someone like me be compatible with you? I’ll let you see my actual looks, ok?”

Fei Yu’s eyes lit up and raised her head to look at me. “Alright! Quickly let me have a look.”

I sighed inwardly as I gradually took off the mask.

“Ah!~” Fei Yu cried out mournfully and she abruptly retreated a couple of steps back before stopping. With terror in her eyes, she trembled and said, “You....You’re really fugly!”

I felt a stab into my heart as I sighed. “Now, you should know why I put on a mask. It’s to cover up my hideous face.” ‘I don’t blame her as she’s an ordinary person after all and I have a ghastly appearance. No matter who sees my appearance, they would be as shocked as she is. Who,

excluding Mu Zi, would be willing to go out with me, who has such an ugly appearance?"

Fei Yu looked at me silently for a long time. I pulled down the hood over my head and got depressed. Even though my heart had already opened up to Mu Zi, my ugly appearance was still painful to me.

"Teach....Teacher, I didn't mean to do that. Sorry." Fei Yu lowered her head as she apologised.

I put back my mask and shook my head. "I'm originally ugly so there's nothing to apologise. Your reaction is normal. Fei Yu, actually.... Hmm, someone is coming." I raised my head to look up at the sky and saw 9 figures heading towards our direction. Judging from their speed, the 9 of them should be at or almost at the Radiant Knight level. How could there be so many experts coming from the fort? I looked at Fei Yu and she seemed to be panicking. It seemed that these fellows were here for her!

The nine people landed simultaneously before us after a ray of light. I was shocked to notice that among them, there was Ke Er Lan Di that I had recently parted with. Could it be that he wanted to harm Fei Yu?

Ke Er Lan Di looked at me and immediately stepped forth. "It's you as I've expected."

I frowned. "Ke Er Lan Di, I didn't expect you to help a tyrant. Could it be that you can't let such a young girl go?"

Fei Yu stood at her spot motionlessly with awkwardness expressed on her face.

Ke Er Lan Di smiled wryly. "We let her go? We are the ones that need her to let us go! Princess, please don't put us in such a spot and head back with us, ok? His Majesty is going to be anxious to death."

I was stunned and looked towards Fei Yu. "Hmm? The one that is really searching for you is the Emperor of the Kingdom of Dalu, your father?"

Fei Yu lowered her head without replying. With my intelligence, I immediately realised what was going on. She had been lying to me all along.

Ke Er Lan Di said, "To be honest with you, His Majesty had come to the fort for an inspection. I also reached the fort not long ago and had already reported what happened when I was with you to him. His Majesty had attached importance in training the army. Princess Fei Yu had probably ran out due to loneliness. She's His Majesty's most doted upon princess. If we were unable to retrieve her, I'm afraid that we will be...." He looked towards Fei Yu, who had her head lowered. He suddenly thought about what Tian Feng had said and asked, "Princess, are you willing to head back with us?"

Fei Yu looked at me before looking at them. She replied after nodding, "I'll head back with all of you." She slightly bowed towards me and said, "Teacher, thank you for taking care of me during this short period of time. It was my mistake to give you trouble. Please come to our Kingdom of Dalu for leisure when you're free."

Even though there wasn't any arrogance in her tone, I could clearly feel that she had greatly distanced herself from me. I knew that it was due to my ugly appearance. How could I blame her? Anyway, everything was just a lie. She had lied to me. I had Mu Zi so everything else didn't matter. I should be happy getting rid of her, but why did I have such a feeling?

I calmly replied, "Princess, I hope that you don't randomly joke around like this in the future. Brother Ke Er, I'll be taking my leave."

Ke Er Lan Di said, "Brother Zhang Gong, I wish that we could fight alongside you when the opportunity arises."

I smiled. "Definitely." I circulated the fusion power in my body before soaring into the sky, heading towards the south. I already withdrew all of my thoughts. What I needed to do now was to receive the Radiant God's inheritance as soon as possible.

.....

Ke Er Lan Di nodded with praise as he saw Zhang Gong Wei left.

Fei Yu stepped a few steps forward. "Brother Ke Er, let's head back." She looked dejected as Zhang Gong's ugly appearance kept flashing through her mind. It was like there was a huge stone that kept suppressing her. Ke

Er Lan Di looked at the beautiful princess and sighed. "Your Highness, why didn't you persist in accompanying him?"

Fei Yu was stunned. "Didn't you expect me to head back with you?"

Ke Er Lan Di sighed. "Your Highness, His Majesty had already passed down the order that if you persevered in following him, we weren't to hinder you."

## Chapter 25: Entering the God Rended Canyon

Fei Yu was shocked. "Why? This shouldn't have happened. Could it be that father doesn't want me anymore?"

Ke Er Lan Di shook his head. "No! That's not it. His Majesty passed down the order probably due to his identity." He looked at the direction that Zhang Gong Wei had left before completely understanding the motives of Tian Feng.

"Identity? What identity does he have?"

Ke Er Lan Di looked at Fei Yu. "Once an opportunity has been missed, you can't gain it back. Your Highness, he's the God's Envoy that you revere. He's the Child of Light, Zhang Gong Wei, he who can solitarily cast forbidden spells and is the youngest light element Magister. The huge gulf behind us was created by him and his friends."

Fei Yu's complexion instantly paled. "You....You're lying. How can he be the Child of Light with such an ugly appearance?"

Ke Er Lan Di smiled wryly. "Your Highness, why would I lie to you? I've personally witnessed his tyrannical strength. He's currently ugly, but I had heard that he was once a handsome youth. He had turned to such a state from fighting against the Demon Emperor. The dark elements corroded his body and rotted his meridians, which resulted to his current looks."

"No! This is impossible. I....I want to find him." Upon saying that, Fei Yu turned to the direction that Zhang Gong had disappeared and ran like a mad woman to pursuing after him.

Ke Er Lan Di shook his head and with a flash of his body, he gently hit the back of Fei Yu's neck, causing her body to soften and collapse towards the ground. Ke Er Lan Di carried Fei Yu's body and sighed saying, "Is appearance that important? Does the beauty or ugliness of a person proves anything? Your Highness! You just let go of such a precious opportunity."

Like the flash of a light, the 9 figures soared into the sky towards Ström

Fortress.

.....

When I was high in the sky with cold breeze blowing against me, I intentionally got rid of the power protecting my body, letting the cold wind hit my body, rustling my clothing. With my long hair trail behind me, an invigorating chill passed through my body, making me feel energized. I consciously caressed my smooth, but ugly face. My moodiness slowly disappeared. Being ugly wasn't my fault, but I couldn't scare people with it. I definitely wouldn't casually remove the mask to prevent what had happened from occurring again.

Before I had completely relaxed, the Holy Sword in my chest suddenly activated, stunning me, resulting in me pausing in mid air. The Holy Sword's powers constantly surged out in all directions, filling every meridian in my entire body. It was a nice and warm, a comfortable feeling. Just then, I forgot about all my previous moodiness and completely submerged myself in the warmth of the Holy Sword. It felt as though I was in my mother's warm embrace.

After I immersed myself in its warmth for a while, I suddenly regained consciousness. The Holy Sword's power must have undulated due to the powers of the Radiant God's battle angel, Mi Jia Lie, nearby. This was great! I didn't expect that it would be this easy to find him.

When I focused on what was below, I saw a narrow crevice on the flat plateau in the Demon race territory. The crevice was extremely deep. This should be the God Rended Canyon. I suppressed my happiness and releasing my power to charge downwards. My body moved like a shooting star to head into the Canyon, while emitting a faint golden light.

When I was above the plateau, I immediately charged into the canyon. A invisible and gentle power suddenly blocked my body descent forcing me back into the sky. It was as though I had landed on a cotton cushion, it didn't hurt me at all. I stabilized my body, stunned. After pondering on it, I understood that the God Rended Canyon had a protective shield. It was the same type of shield that the God King had arranged when we first

went to find the Holy Sword.

I thought for a while before flying and stopping right in front of the boundary. I closed my eyes and focused entirely on the Holy Sword in my chest. My mind completely fused with the sea of warm power as it gently called out, sending signals towards the boundary.

When the white light that surged out from me came in contact with the boundary, it initially resisted my power but as I constantly released the power from the Holy Sword towards it, the obstruction gradually disappeared. I tested it by moving my body and was happy to find that the boundary no longer resisted me. The power of the Holy Sword from my body gradually entered the boundary.

As I entered it, I greatly understood the might of the boundary. It was at least 10 metres thick. Even though I was enclosed with the Holy Sword's power in the boundary, it was as though I was entering a swamp, I could only slowly advance forward.

Finally, all of the pressure was gone. My body lightened up and fell into a world that was filled with clean air.

When I was in the canyon, I realised that my surroundings were full of vitality; insects' and birds' cries could be heard everywhere. The interior of the canyon was filled with vegetation. It seemed like it had been a long time since any large animal came here, as the canyon didn't have any paths. The ground was covered with dense layers of thistles and thorns, making it impossible for me to get through by walking, so I continued flying.

With my cultivation, I could use my fusion powers to forcefully cut out a path, but I didn't want to disrupt the peaceful atmosphere here.

The fusion powers in my body constantly undulated. Even though it wasn't intense, it didn't weaken. This brought me to a spot which I thought that the remaining Radiant God's Power should be in a opening, but there were only plants around without any signs of a opening.

I circulated the three gold dans in my body, preparing all of my senses to reach their peak. While I probed my surroundings, I simultaneously

took off the cloth covering the Sukrad's staff and gradually inserting my fusion powers. I could clearly feel that the protective boundary had briefly appeared nearby. I had a clear view of the 3.3 meters around me. I first surveyed my surroundings before circulating the power in my body to thoroughly search the place.

The vitality of my surroundings made me exceptionally comfortable. It was as though every blade of grass contained tremendous power. However, after thoroughly searching through the place, I still couldn't find any sign of an abnormality.

While I hovered in mid air, I couldn't help but to become nervous as I had already done my best in searching the place. But there weren't any indications. Like this, it would be useless no matter how hard I tried.

## Chapter 26: Simmering in Pain

Could it be that I couldn't find it due to a lack in cultivation? I landed on ground where it had a low patch of grass and sat crossed legged, carrying Sukrad's staff on my back. I silently circulated the three gold dans in my body, constantly absorbing various magic elements from the surrounding.

The amount of magic elements in such a vitality filled place was exceptionally large. I could distinctly feel all of the elements entering my body. I had noticed that there were seven coloured power energy cells being constantly absorbed and converted. My body's gold dans were filled to the brim with powers in a short moment and gold liquid-like powers filled my entire body, making my six senses to increase by several fold. It had made me feel exceptionally enriched with the abundant powers in my body.

The amount of powers gathered gradually increased to the point where I felt that I was becoming bloated with power as they accumulated. I was already having some difficulties adapting to the continuous increase in power, it was impossible to continue training. The amount of power here was too much for me. I realised that something terrifying was happening. The powers in my body no longer listened to my commands as they rapidly absorbed the powers from my surroundings. Numerous magic elements were entering my body, absorbed by my fusion power. My fears slowly intensified as it reached to the point that was unbearable. If this were to continue, the tremendous power would ruin my body, but what could I do now?

With the three gold dans as its center, the fusion powers gradually became more and more substantial, causing my normally smooth-flowing meridians to become congested. The speed of the absorption gradually increased. Currently, I was already unable to control any part of my body, excluding my consciousness. 'Mi Jia Lie, you bastard, are you trying to kill me? I'm already going to explode with powers before I even receive your inheritance!'

The elements in my surroundings didn't share my thoughts as they continued their initial pace to gather towards me. 'Sigh! I was too greedy. If I had stopped absorbing my powers after recovering to my peak state, this situation could have been avoided. According to this situation, once my entire body has been congested with power and continues to absorb powers, my body will explode. I didn't expect that I will die with my powers going amok during cultivation, instead of dieing under the Monster King's hands. This is such an irony!'

The pain from being congested with powers slowly made my consciousness to start fading. I clearly felt my capillaries were spurting blood out from my skin. My body spasmed slightly, nearing the verge of collapse.

Finally, the powers in my body had reached the point of bursting. Due to my mind still functioning clearly, I could hear the crackling of every bone in my entire body. 'I'm finished. This is bad. Am I really going to die? Mu Zi! It should be unthinkable for you to guess that I will actually die so pathetically.'

Just when I felt hopeless in dealing with this situation, there was suddenly a warm power that surged out from my chest. That power wasn't affected in the slightest by my congested meridians as it instantly covered my entire body, forcefully stopping my body from exploding. The suppression of the powers momentarily made my body to jolt as my body charged towards the sky, like a gold shooting star.

'Hong!' I was rebounded back by the Canyon's boundary and fell heavily on the ground. Blood was continuously spewing from my mouth. The severe internal damage and exterior pain had made me feel like I was dying.

At this moment, there was a hot feeling that suddenly came from my back that instantly spread throughout my body. It seemed to be moving along through my meridians and dulled my pain a little. With my consciousness fading, I already didn't have the strength to think about what that power was. I just wanted to be relieved from the eternal damnation of pain. Even death would be better to me than being tortured

with such pain anymore.

The surrounding elements were still gathering towards me. The thick and overflowing fusion powers were constantly putting pressure on the bones in my body, causing sharp cracks to ring out. I clearly felt every single bone in my body being pulverized. 'I'm done. I'm finished' I felt intense pain constantly stimulating my nerves. 'Why? Why is this happening? I didn't do anything wrong before. Why are the heavens punishing me?' When the last bone in my body had shattered, the overflow of fusion power started to infiltrate my entire body. It would be much better for me to just die now than to suffer from such pain.

Initially, with such intense pain, I should have already lost my consciousness. But everytime when I was going to lose my consciousness, there would be a sudden cooling power that surged out from my upper dantian, inhibiting me from passing out. This torture shouldn't be bearable to anyone. I currently couldn't move, but could still feel wave after wave of intense pain that wracked towards my consciousness. 'My fusion powers, I beg you, quickly end my life. I really can't take it any longer.' The pain from my bones shattering was beyond the limit of what I could stand. As I groaned from the pain, I pleaded for death's arrival.

An icy feeling suddenly came forth from my forehead and started intensifying, making my consciousness become enveloped by it. I instantly felt my consciousness clearing up and the pain that I was suffering from decreased slightly. Just when I thought that I could catch my breath, the elements in the canyon suddenly increased their speed drastically in absorbing inside of me.

"Ah!~" I yelled out. I didn't know when, but I could let out my voice.

My body was constantly tumbling in mid air. The fusion powers were frantically pushing against my internal organs. There was a heart piercing pain that constantly jerked on my nerves, making my body to shake continuously. Purplish black blood was violently spurting from my mouth, mouthful after mouthful. My internal organs were starting to tear apart.

No matter if it was the warm feeling from my chest, the scorching pain from my back or the cool feeling from my forehead, they intensified several times over. The warm feeling maintained my body's power so that it couldn't breakout from my body, the scorching feeling was keeping my skin active and the cool feeling was maintaining my consciousness. I could clearly feel that my internal organs were disappearing one after another. The strange thing was that even though I was in constant pain, my consciousness was becoming much clearer.

## Chapter 27: Within the Consciousnesses

‘Why are you torturing me like this?! Can it be that I don’t have the right to die?’ While my consciousness is becoming clearer, the heart wrenching pain was intensifying. ‘I remember that someone said that if you were to lose one third of the blood in your body, you will die. I had almost lost half of the blood in my body. Why aren’t I dying?’

“Ah!~” My heart felt as though it had been torn apart. My body was spasming and blood came out from all of my seven apertures as I heavily fell to the ground. When I opened my eyes, an eye piercing light was seen. Excluding my mind, I virtually couldn’t feel anything else. The fusion powers in my body were frantically wreaking a havoc in my body, ‘tidying up’ my body. I was already numb to the pain. The icy feeling from my head could no longer stop me from passing out. I unconsciously smiled as I was finally going to be relieved from the pain.

‘Who wants to die? I have a lot of matters that I couldn’t leave behind. It’s been such a long time since I met my parents, Mu Zi and my friends. I don’t even know how is Hai Shui doing. If I died, can everyone defeat the Monster King?’ As I carried along my reluctance and thoughts, my consciousness got increasingly fuzzy. Finally, I was freed as all of my pains had disappeared. My sight gone pitch black that I could no longer see anything.

It was unknown how much time had passed when my consciousness recovered again. Everything was pitch black and my body seemed to be floating in mid air. Only the indifferent passing of time and an extremely comfortable feeling could be felt. ‘I finally died and have been relieved of the pain? God King! You really harmed me to have actually tricked me to this hellish place to torture me. My life is so pitiful!’

“My life is worse than yours!” A familiar gentle voice sounded in my consciousness.

‘Hmm? This voice? Isn’t this voice’s Mi Jia Lie’s? Could it be after I died, my spirit met with his? Just nice, I can give him a lecture.’

He seemed to know what I was thinking as Mi Jia Lie voiced out again, “Don’t scold me, I’m not to be blamed for this! Do you think that receiving an inheritance would be easy? You will definitely suffer some pain.”

After hearing what he said, my mind jolted. ‘Could it be that I’m not dead?’

“Of course you aren’t dead, my child.”

With a shine of a light, my surroundings lit up, transforming into a white world. A faint golden light figure appeared before me. Even though I couldn’t see it distinctly, I could clearly see those six gold wings. This was my first time seeing Mi Jia Lie’s figure.

My mind suddenly blanked and when it recovered, I suddenly realised that my body had appeared again, but it was completely transparent. Mi Jia Lie was not far in front of me.

I tested moving my transparent body and asked, astonished, “This... What’s going on?”

“Child, you’ve suffered, but you must undergo this pain. How can you withstand my tremendous powers without completely modifying your body? You were much stronger than I thought. You were able to persevere with the three divine instruments’ assistance and your mind isn’t disordered. The most crucial moment has passed. I’m now confident in completely passing you all of my powers.”

I shook my head with all my strength. “Wait, can you first explain to me what’s going on? What’s three divine instruments? What is about the modification of my body? I don’t understand any of the things that have happened.”

Mi Jia Lie replied, “Zhang Gong, don’t be anxious. I’ll explain it all to you. When you neared this place, I already discovered you with the remnants of my will. I’ve waited for you for a few thousand years already. It’s only after I passed the Radiant God’s power to you for my mission to be accomplished. The pain that I’ve suffered all these years you could never imagine.”

“When you first entered the canyon in search of my presence, I already started gathering the powers that I’ve accumulated over these thousands of years. Once you entered your meditative state, I started to modify your body. It’s impossible for your human body to inherit divine powers. I must alter your body to become the same as our God race. It can also be said that your body is no longer of the Human race, but God’s race now. I know that you have reluctance to leave the human world so I’ve kept a lot of your human characteristics. You’re now a hybrid with the body of both a human and a God. I’ve long since discussed about the modification of your body with the God King. It’s a necessary, but also an extremely risky procedure. If you weren’t able to withstand the tremendous pain that would result in the scattering of your mind, everything until now would have been for naught. However, we succeeded. You’re much stronger than I thought. With the protection from the Holy Sword and Dragon God staff, your body was completely modified by me. In addition, the Ice God mask’s protection in maintaining your consciousness, everything went perfectly.”

I frowned. “Wait a minute, it can’t be that the mask that is on my face is the Ice God’s mask that you’ve mentioned, right?”

Mi Jia Lie nodded. “That’s correct, that is the Ice God’s mask. Perhaps, it was heaven’s will for you to actually obtain it. The mask was the divine instrument of the Ice God. During the great war between the Gods and monsters, the Ice God fell. His mask’s location was unknown. Beyond my expectation, you’ve gotten it. With its help, you were then able to be smoothly modified by me.”

I frowned. “What’s the function of the Ice God’s mask?” ‘I didn’t expect that the mask that I had bought to cover my ugly face had such usefulness. It seems that the God King really took care of me. Not only have I survived, I had also successfully received the inheritance.’ My mood became elated. ‘I can also see my beloved Mu Zi soon. Haha!’

“Zhang Gong, you’ve not received the inheritance. Don’t be so happy yet.”

I was stunned as I cried out, “What?! Hasn’t my body already been

modified? Why have I not received the inheritance?"

Mi Jia Lie smiled wryly. "I'm not sure if I hadn't explained clear enough or that there's a problem in your ability to understand. I previously just said that I had modified your body, but the inheritance hasn't started. If you had already inherited my powers, do you think I'd still be here conversing with you?"

## Chapter 28: Monster Race's Structure

I smiled wryly. "Ah! The inheritance hasn't started? Can I decide not to continue receiving it?! The modifying of my body was already beyond what I can handle. If I continue the inheritance, I'm afraid that I won't be able to withstand it."

Mi Jia Lie laughed. "It won't be. Didn't I say that the most risky part had already passed? You've already suffered the pain from receiving the inheritance. I'm also not from the Monster race, so why would I make you suffer again? Let's chat for a while before the inheritance, if not, there won't be any other chances."

My mood dampened as I knew that once the inheritance had completed, the Radiant God's battle angel, Mi Jia Lie, would completely disappear from this world. He had sacrificed more than what I could for our world's and the God realm's peace and harmony.

Mi Jia Lie sighed. "Child, don't be upset for me. This is my choice and something I needed to do as the protector of the God's realm, it's my duty. After you obtain my inheritance, in addition to your current powers, not only will you have all of my previous powers, but you'll reach a realm even beyond mine. In the God's realm, excluding Lord God King, my power was third in strength. Even though the Monster King is powerful, the power he will possess in this world won't be too much since his original body is still sealed in the God's realm. He will definitely have remained a lot of his power in the God realm so that he wouldn't be eliminated by Lord God King. Therefore, after receiving my inheritance, you'll have a larger possibility in eliminating him from the world with your friends that possess divine instruments."

"The main function of the Ice God's mask is to maintain a clear consciousness. Perhaps, you'll think that its function is not useful, but let me tell you this. The Ice God's mask is similar to the Holy Sword, a first grade divine instrument. Its power is only slightly lower than the Holy Sword. It can help you to replenish the powers in your body so that you can use them more efficiently. Moreover, it can also maintain your

consciousness at critical moments to allow you to make the most accurate decisions.”

I nodded. “Radiant God, can I call you that?”

Mi Jia Lie nodded.

I asked, “When you initially told me that the inheritance will be dangerous, did that refer to the modification of my body?”

Mi Jia Lie nodded. “That’s correct. The modifying of your body was the key step. You’ll only be able to withstand my powers after completely modifying your body. I changed your body as you came here and discovered that your body had a few powers that had already been fused, which made me extremely happy because the fusion of my powers is necessary. Since you had fused the powers with the Holy Sword as their center, it made my job much easier and also allowed me to insert more powers in your body. You’ve to know that when battling with the Monster race, the more powers you possess, the greater the chances of you winning. The inheritance that will occur shortly will be extremely safe. You can rest assured. I will finally be able to accomplish the God King’s task.”

Mi Jia Lie’s voice had a tinge of sadness in it. I knew that he was reluctant to leave this world so I couldn’t bear to ask him, “Is there really no way to leave your will here after inheriting your powers to me?”

Mi Jia Lie shook his head. “That’s right, once I pass the God’s inheritance to you, all of my powers and will will be fused within your consciousness. Actually, if you think outside of the box, you’ll understand that your inheritance doesn’t mean my death. It means that I’ve obtained a new life through your body. You’ll have my powers and my previous memories, in order to become the next Radiant God and the next battle angel, Mi Jia Lie. Alright, we don’t have much time left. Modifying your body has taken up a lot of time. When you woke up just now, my will had discovered that the Monster King is in the final stage of awakening. You must accept my inheritance as soon as possible. I’ll first explain to you the internal compositions of the Monster race before you undergo the

inheritance.”

Mi Jia Lie remained silent for a while before saying, “If they didn’t possess strong powers of infiltration and destruction, then the Monster race can be said to be a powerful race like our God race. The leader of the Monster race is the Monster King. His power is even beyond that of the God King. Otherwise, we won’t have let him live until now. Even though I previously said that we eliminated majority of the Monster race, some of the Monster race’s minds had been snatched up by the Monster King. Once he reappears in the world, he’ll definitely release those powerful foes to gain a new lives through human bodies. The most terrifying helpers of the Monster King are the three Great Monsters, Dark Monster—Jia Si Ke Li Duo, Witch Monster—Ha Er Yue Di, and Blood Monster—Ka An Da Er Jia. With the combination of their powers, they wouldn’t be inferior to my power.” Mi Jia Lie sighed as though he was reminiscing about his past.

“Once the three of them resurrect, they’ll bring catastrophe to the Human race. With the Monster King and the three Great Monsters, it will be difficult for you to deal with them. The only way for you to resist against them is that even when the three Great Monsters completely resurrected, they don’t possess all of the powers that they had previously. They were severely injured by us after all. I believe that if they were to use a human body as their host for resurrection, they could at most keep about 30% of their previous powers. That is to say after you receive my inheritance, you should be able to deal with those three Great Monsters.”

I added, “I’ve already met with the Dark Monster Jia Si Ke Li Duo that you had mentioned and fought against him, but he escaped at the last moment.”

Mi Jia Lie was shocked. “You met with Jia Si Ke Li Duo? Quickly tell me what happened with him.”

I told him how I initially met with Jia Si Ke Li Duo that possessed Demon King Satan’s body and how we defeated him.

After hearing my narration, Mi Jia Lie suddenly laughed for a long time

before saying, "It seems that my prediction was right. Jia Si Ke Li Duo should be the first Great Monster that the Monster King resurrected. With you and your friends' power to be able to defeat him at that time, it has proven my hypothesis. He should only have had about 20% of his powers at that time and even if he recovered all of his powers, 30% of his previous powers would be as good as it could get. In this case, the chances for you eliminating the Monster King has increased drastically."

## Chapter 29: Inheritance Begins

I was elated. “What about the Monster King? We should be able to use the ultimate forbidden spell to completely eradicate him and the three Great Monsters right?”

Mi Jia Lie replied gravely, “Zhang Gong, you need to remember that you can never underestimate the Monster King. I’m also not sure how powerful he will be, but I can certainly tell you this. Eliminating him won’t be that easy, you must be willing to make some sacrifices. The power that the Monster King possesses is unfathomable, he killed so many of my comrades in battle at that time! Zhang Gong, once you finish inheriting my powers you will notice five floating orbs of power. Each orb is the divine will for one of the divine instruments that your friends possess. You must pass the divine wills to your friends so that they can bring out the full potential of their divine instruments. Only with the six of you, will it be possible for you to eliminate the Monster King. The most horrifying thing to the various races will be the uncountable monsters. The monsters will constantly appear as long as the Monster King has power, so you must kill their source of life in order to wipe them out.”

I seriously nodded. “I understand, I’ll definitely eliminate the Monster King as quickly as I can. No matter how strong the Monster race is, I’ll definitely eradicate them to restore the world’s peace and harmony. This is my promise to you!”

“Great! Great! Great! With this, I can relax. Zhang Gong, during the inheritance, I’ll do my best in passing all of my knowledge to your memory, including the method in using the Radiant Holy Sword and some light magic forbidden spells. You need to remember that even if your powers are tremendous after the inheritance, you will always have a limit. Ah! That’s right, I almost forgot to tell you the most important matter. When you pass the divine will to your friends, they must be at their peak condition. Otherwise, they will not be able to inherit the divine will, which will cause their body to explode from the vast amount of power. You must absolutely remember this warning.”

My heart jolted before I nodded seriously.

Mi Jia Lie sighed. "Alright, I've said all that I needed to say. I believe that you'll achieve the final victory. Alright, let's begin."

"Wait! Wait!" I shouted to stop Mi Jia Lie. I currently had a complicated feeling, even though I wished to receive the inheritance in order to save the world, I hadn't wished for Mi Jia Lie to disappear. This dilemma made me feel exceptionally dejected. I said with difficulty, "Radiant God, I....."

Mi Jia Lie let out a light chuckle. "Enough, stop being childish and toughen up. Let's begin." Upon saying that, the light figure that I could only faintly see suddenly lit up. "Accomplishing the task in eliminating the Monster King will be the best repayment to me."

Just as I wanted to say something, Mi Jia Lie shouted, "Focus! We're starting."

My entire body jolted. My eyes flushed and tears started to flow out involuntarily. My sacrifices were nothing as compared to Mi Jia Lie's. I clenched my teeth to control my impulses and gradually calmed down. My mind slowly focused as I focused on Mi Jia Lie's silhouette.

"I, in the name of the Radiant God's battle angel, Mi Jia Lie, will be passing the divine inheritance to the person before me. He will then be able to inherit my divine position and the lifelong mission to become the next generation's Radiant God in order to rule over the powers of light. Zhang Gong Wei, are you willing to take on this responsibility?" Mi Jia Lie's voice was domineering and consisted a feeling that rejection wasn't a choice.

I took in a deep breath and answered emotionally, yet full of resolution, "I....I'm willing. I promise that no matter what difficulties I face, I'll accomplish the Radiant God's mission to annihilate all sinister beings."

Mi Jia Lie replied benevolently. "Oh great Radiant God, with the guidance of the blades of moonlight and using the spirit of heaven and earth, let the battle angel of God awaken!"

My sight suddenly lit up, everything in my surroundings became an

ocean of gold. The light figure disappeared and I was no longer see my body. A tsunami of power surged towards me from all directions with lightning speed. Since I was in my meditative state, I couldn't feel the expansion of my powers. I only felt that my consciousness was steadily expanding. The constantly growing consciousness was rapidly absorbing the powers from the surroundings.

When my consciousness cleared, there were three dazzling items before me. On the left was Sukrad's staff, and on my right was the silver Ice God's mask. They were emitting gold and white lights respectively. Between them was an exceptionally magnificent silver-coloured long sword. The sword was about 1.5 metres long and four fingers wide. The ridge of the sword looked straight, but with detailed inspection it seemed to have an peculiar arc. The arc looked completely natural, as if it was heavenly made. The hilt and the blade came together like a cross. The hilt was made from two circular shapes that curved slightly downwards to form a fifth of the sword's total length. There were dense spiral veined lines and a transparent rhombus-shaped gemstone, which was indistinctly giving off a rainbow coloured glimmer, at the center of the hilt, where the handguard and blade intersected. The divine silver aura constantly emitted from the sword to the surrounding in waves. This should be how the Holy Sword originally looked.

I tried to extend my hand to grab onto them, but I couldn't find my body, nor could I control anything. The three divine instruments simply gave off divine light as they just floated before me.

Mi Jia Lie's voiced out, "I'll help you by changing the shape of Sukrad's staff for it to be more convenient while using all three divine instruments."

On the left, the Sukrad's staff suddenly gave off intense light. The transparent gemstone was giving off an abnormally dazzling white light and was intercepted by the gold light ray from the staff. Under my astonishment, the Sukrad's staff gradually dissolved being engulfed by the white and gold light, finally forming a white and gold ball of light.

The light from the light ball intensified and after a short span the

Sukrad's staff disappeared. What substituted it was a golden glove with many small transparent gemstones on the back. The small gems should be formed from the essence of the initial circular gemstone from the staff.

“Goodbye, my child.” Mi Jia Lie’s caring, but mournful voice suddenly voiced out. Without waiting for my reply, the powers in my surroundings suddenly increased by one hundred fold, surging frantically with me as its center. The enormous amount of power constantly struck my consciousness, forcing my consciousness to bundle up, resulting in the loss of my consciousness.

## Chapter 30: The New Radiant God

My consciousness returned after some time. Groggily, I felt that my body entered a variable hot and cold cycle, making me indescribably uncomfortable. The fuzzy feeling gradually got clearer and a icy cold feeling suddenly surged out from my forehead as it abruptly got in contact with the scorching heat at my chest. In that instant, time seemed to freeze. The two opposing powers suddenly merged together, creating a warm feeling that constantly spread as it circulated throughout my body.

Ah! I could use my inner vision again. I was shocked to discover that my body was completely different. I couldn't see any bones or meridians, only a vast ocean. My entire body was made from dazzling golden lights. I was unclear on how many of the golden lights there were, but I could clearly see that they followed a natural orbit as they circulated. I couldn't gauge how much power they possessed at the moment, but I could see that they securely protected my inner organs, which had also turned gold.

I thought, 'If each of those uncountable light spots have the power of my initial gold dan, wouldn't my power be unimaginable?'

Suddenly, the light spots in my body suddenly quicken their pace. The lights transformed into a series of constantly looping rivers moving rapidly, charging into the heavens and transmitting like a gushing spring. My previously clear consciousness momentarily lapsed, after my sight gone out I felt that my body was being called back.

When I opened my eyes, I saw that I was still within the God Rended Canyon, but my clothes were missing. My skin was similar to sparkling and translucent fine jade, divine light was constantly flowing underneath my skin. Even though it was night, I could still clearly see my surroundings. There were tremendous changes to the God Rended Canyon. I was surprised that all the lively vegetation had disappeared and what replaced it was empty, just melancholic rock walls. 'Where are all the plants and animals? Can it be that they were formed by Mi Jia Lie and they disappeared after the loss of his support?'

Thinking about Mi Jia Lie, my mood dampened. 'It seems that I

successfully received his inheritance, but he disappeared afterwards.... Inheritance?' Thinking about the inheritance, I willed the powers in my body to activate.

It seemed as if I was formed by light after I activated my powers. My entire body gave off an intense light, eliminating the darkness around me. I started to experience a new feeling throughout my body. The light elements in the vicinity seemed to have accepted my command. A thick boundary was formed at the perimeter of the light screen due to the attraction of my powers. My entire body jolted as six golden wings appeared behind my back. My body lightened and I gradually floated off from ground. I didn't have to use much control to hover mid air. I could unmistakably feel that a casual wave of my hand could cause the powers around me to eliminate anything before me. The vitality filled light elements were like my friends, they were never leaving me and constantly protecting me.

I withdrew my powers to land back on the ground. I knelt down and kowtowed nine time before sincerely saying, "Radiant God Mi Jia Lie, even though we didn't meet each other in person, I know that you're undeniably a god that possesses a benevolent heart. Because of what has been bestowed by you, so in my heart, you're like my teacher. Rest in peace. I'll definitely help you accomplish everything you wanted to see. This is my eternal promise to you."

'I'm currently not the previous Zhang Gong Wei. I can no longer live for myself, but for all life forms in the world. It's my duty to protect them so that they are never to be harmed by any sinister beings.' The sense of responsibility filled my chest.

I suddenly thought about the final words of Mi Jia Lie as he died after standing. I raised my hand to caress my face. As expected, the Ice God's mask was still covering my face and there was a gold glove on my right hand. This glove should have been created from my Sukrad's staff, so I would call it God's Guard. With the flick of my right hand, the transparent gemstones on God's Guard gave off an exceptional swarm of moving lights. A warm feeling could be felt from my chest as an

auspicious and peaceful power surged out. As I willed it, the silvery-white Holy Sword instantly appeared before me. My heartstrings trembled, this was the genuine Holy Sword! I finally possessed it. I unhurriedly stretched out my right hand that had the God's Guard to snatch the Holy Sword. The Holy Sword seemed to be spiritually connected with me, as it voluntarily lept into my right hand. The light aura emitting from my body intensified drastically upon holding the Holy Sword. A peerless divine power burst outwards from me, filling the entire God Rended Canyon.

The six light wings on my back expanded and in a blink of an eye, I was already high up in the sky. The silver-white Holy Sword lit up the night sky. With a casual swing, a long silvery light shot forth. This was divine power! I had already become the new generation's Radiant God. Blue, White, yellow, red and green lights suddenly soared out from the God Rended Canyon. Ah! These were the War God's, Sky God's, Titan God's, Lightning God's, and Wind God's divine wills. With these, I was sure that it would increase our fighting abilities while resisting the Monster race.

I carefully kept the five power balls in my spacial pocket, fearing that using my divine powers would damage them.

I took in a deep breath and tried my best to calm my emotions. I didn't know how long had passed since I reached here, nor how the God Protector's Domain was, so I needed to head back as quickly as possible. After uniting everyone's power, we would head out in search of the Monster race to eradicate them once and for all. My confidence had increased drastically after receiving the inheritance. Even though I wasn't sure what standard my powers had reached, it should still have reached the legendary Grand Magister's realm.

# Chapter 31: Returning to the Domain

When I flew from the God Rended Canyon to the Demon race's plateau, it was still the same desolate place as the first time I came. The only difference was that the boundary of the God Rended Canyon had disappeared.

Suddenly, I was alarmed as I perceived faint trace of the Monster race's aura with my divine powers. It seemed that the Monster race had already made their move. No matter how pressing time was, I still had to make a trip back to the God Protector Domain.

'With my current powers, my skill in using long distance teleportation array should be fairly accurate. I will give it a try, in order to save time. I can still fly back to the base even if the positioning is erred, and I will still have a shorter distance to travel.' Thinking about that, I secured the Holy Sword and used the God's Guard on my right hand to draw the long distance teleportation array. The God's Guard showed its versatility as it drew up the appropriate magic array with a mere thought. The array was also those kind of complicated long distance magic array that required lots of mental power. The previous me would have spent a long time drawing such an array, in order to rest and recover my mental power to prevent mistakes in drawing the array. But this time was different, I didn't feel any exhaustion and my mind was in its peak condition as well. I took just half an hour to draw up the enormously complicated long distance magic array. I was quite confident that I should be within a five kilometer radius of the God Protector Domain.

I used my six wings of light to envelop myself before taking a deep breath and entering the magic array. After I took a final look at the now desolate looking God Rended Canyon, I started the chant to activate the magic array. With a flash of light, I entered a seven coloured world. With the protection of the wings, I felt no resistance and my surroundings were rapidly fading away. With the scenery constantly changing, it made me light headed, so I closed my eyes.

After my body lightened, the surrounding pressure vanished. I was now

standing on the peak of a lofty mountain. Clusters of clouds passed by that hit my body with their moisture. After noticing my body was bare, I couldn't help but to chuckle. How could I go and meet up with the rest looking like this? Wouldn't I be forced out of the domain like this? I retrieved some clothes from my spacial pocket and wore a white coloured light attribute magic robe on my exterior.

When I activated my divine will to survey my surroundings, unexpectedly the God Protector Domain wasn't far front from my location. However, the domain seemed too peaceful. This kind of situation shouldn't occur, even at night. I was alarmed. Had something happened?

I flapped the six light wings on my back to fly towards the God Protector Domain. Within a few blinks of an eye, I was above the God Protector Domain. The interior of the domain was pitch black. I could only feel a minority of human presences, when compared to the previous 10,000 plus people in the domain previously. Could it be that the Monster race had attacked this place? It shouldn't be, there wasn't any lingering aura of the Monster race here!

I withdrew my wings and landed on the ground. Anxiously, I rapidly activated the river-like divine power, making intense light rays to light up the domain.

Nothing had changed. The mountain range and sentries were the same from when I left previously. The stone houses were also still in their original positions.

I used my divine power to call out, "Is anyone here?" An enormous voice surged towards the sky, vibrating the surrounding stone houses. I was also shocked at such an outcome because I didn't use much divine power!

My voice constantly echoed. Every living being in the mountain range should have heard my call. I was too lazy to go on a man hunt because I quickly wanted to know what was happening here, so I used the most simplest method possible. Expectedly, once the sound weakened, a couple people from the domain gathered towards my location.

I withdrew the wings from my back to return into my body, because

seeing such a sight would be universally shocking.

Ten black shadows surrounded me like lightning. ‘Their power seems so little. It’s as though that I can eliminate them just by moving my fingers. When did the brothers of our domain become so weak?’

After I realized who had come, I couldn’t help but to doubt my thoughts. The leader of the crowd was Jian Shan and his cultivation wasn’t weak. ‘His power couldn’t have deteriorated, right?’

“Who are you? What’s your motive in intruding my God Protector Domain so late at night?” Jian Shan was shocked as he saw the divine light emitted from my body when he queried. It was probably because I was wearing a mask that resulted to his failure to recognize me.

I smiled wryly. “What? I hadn’t seen you for a few days and you don’t know me anymore? I’m Zhang Gong!”

Jian Shan looked at me warily, but his suspicious expression changed to elation after a while. He said in a shaky voice, “Zhang Gong? Zhang Gong, is that really you? You’re finally back.” He abruptly charged in front of my body to grab onto my shoulders. But when he was a meter away from me, he suddenly stopped and struggled for a while. He frowned and asked, “Zhang Gong, what did you do?”

I was stunned as I hadn’t cast a protective barrier! How did this happen? I scratched my head and explained, “I didn’t do anything! It must be due to the too rapid increase in my powers, I haven’t fully grasped them. Jian Shan, where is everyone? Why is there only so few men in the base? Where’s Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest? Where’s Mu Zi?” In the middle of my speech I tried my best to withdraw the powers emitted from my body. Only then was I able to embrace Jian Shan.

Jian Shan’s body shook slightly. He was obviously excited as it had been sometimes since we parted from each other. Jian Shan complained, “You left without saying a word and also gone for such a long time. Do you know that the continent had undergone so many changes that the heavens and earth had flipped upside down?”

I asked, stunned, “I’ve left for a long time? How long did I left for?”

## Chapter 32: The Change in the Continent

Jian Shan said snappily, “Have you gone nuts to not even remember how long you have gone? If it wasn’t for your voice, figure and the Holy Sword’s aura emitting from your body, I wouldn’t be confident that you’re Zhang Gong. You have been gone for about two years. Your princess from the Demon race and that girl from the Kingdom of Aixia have been missing you dearly.”

Stunned, I replied, “Two years? I’ve been gone for such a long time?” The inheritance felt like it only took a few days! I hadn’t expected that I had left for such a prolonged period of time. ‘Two years?! Of course there’ll be a lot of changes. Perhaps even the Monster King has already awoken.’ I asked anxiously, “Quickly, give me a run down on what has happened during the time that I’ve been gone.”

Jian Shan sighed. “Not long after you left, a little lady from the Kingdom of Aixia came. She’s known as Hai Shui Xing and Princess Mu Zi went to receive her. She has missed you, every morning she’d look afar at the peak of the mountain waiting for your return. She’s really infatuated with you! You mustn’t let her down. Even though Mu Zi has been helping the five elders with training the brothers, she didn’t express much emotion. But from her eyes, we knew that she really missed you. How was your trip? Did you obtain the God’s inheritance?”

‘Hai Shui? Why has Hai Shui come? I don’t have time to think about my relationships right now, because eliminating the Monster race is my top priority.’ “Jian Shan, don’t discuss with me such trivial topics. Can you tell me where everyone is and what movements the Monster race has made during these two years?”

Jian Shan nodded. “After you had been gone for about three months, there was a Monster race den that emerged in the Kingdom of Xiuda. A large quantity of monsters spawned from the den. Big Brother Zhan Hu and Xiu Si brought the First Division brothers to head there to assist. Unfortunately, those monsters were completely annihilated only after losing a third of Xiuda’s Earth Dragon Cavalry Squad elites. After such an

incident, it let the entire continent develop fear after finally experiencing the invasion of the Monster race.

The Monster race's dens started appearing again throughout the three kingdoms a few months afterwards. Our brothers were forced to mobilise and participate in the elimination of the Monster race's forces. It could be said that our people's support was in each of the three kingdoms. The brothers were led by Big Brother Zhan Hu, Xiu Si, Xin Ao, and the five elders personally supervised the brothers in the Kingdom of Xiuda. The Kingdom of Aixia had Princess Mu Zi, Hai Shui, Dong Ri, your Xiao Jin and the Demon Fox Xiao Rou, who can already transform into a human. Xiao Rou is really amazing. With her acute senses, she was able to accurately pinpoint every location which the monster den would appear, so Princess Mu Zi's side currently has the least amount of losses."

"Our six divisions of the Guard Battalion had been divided into two groups. Three divisions to defend the three human kingdoms and the remaining three divisions that has lower cultivation were also divided into three divisions to act as help out in the three kingdoms. Currently, there's about 4000 of our people helping the three kingdoms. However, we have lost roughly 3000 of our brothers. The losses that the three kingdoms have sustained are undeterminable. If it wasn't for us waiting for your return, us couple of brothers would have already joined the frontline long ago."

My heart sunk. I didn't expect that the Monster race would have such fast movements. As I thought about that, I asked, "How are the Demon and Beast races? It can't be that the Monster race didn't attack their side, right?"

Jian Shan explained seriously, "Since the Demon and Beast races were too far from the Human race and that we didn't have enough manpower, we couldn't support them. It was fortunate that the most elites of the Demon and Beast races also eliminated many monsters den, but they also received huge losses. The most terrifying part of the Monster race is that they are always hidden, making it impossible for us to know when they will appear. Once they appear, they would immediately destroy all the life

forms and infrastructure in the surroundings. Their tyrannical powers is horrifying. I heard that there was a monster den that appeared in a middle-sized town. The entire town was in ruins within just two days, the monsters had even killed all 10,000 people. Currently, the various races of the worlarein within an abyss of suffering.”

I clenched my fists. “Could it be said that you have always been under attack?”

Jian Shan nodded. “In the beginning, a few tens of thousand people died under the hands of the Monster race. The quantity of monsters that we eliminated are innumerable. We had been under attack until the Dragons and Nature Elves appeared that the situation changed.”

I was shocked. “What? The Dragons and Nature Elves have already participated in the battle against the Monster race?”

Jian Shan smiled. “That’s correct! It’s due to them that our losses have been minimized and the Monster race couldn’t attack in an unrestrained manner. The information from the Nature Elves is exceptional. They were also responsible in guiding the forces in finding a possible location of the Monster race. Moreover, the Dragon race’s terrifying and powerful forces were incomparable to any other race. I heard that the Dragon King has already personally joined the elimination of the Monster race. Wherever the Dragon race appeared, the monster dens were already destroyed before they had a chance to even damage anything. Only after three months of the Dragons and Nature Elves having stepped in, could the three human kingdoms stabilize themselves. The Monster race no longer created the large scale destruction as they did before.”

After hearing to here, I heaved a sigh of relief. “The Monster King hasn’t appeared?”

Jian Shab nodded. “There’s no news on the Monster King and the appearance of the monster dens has been decreasing lately. However, in every den that appeared now, there would be several strong monsters. Their powers are greater than the ones that were appearing previously, making it even more difficult for us to deal with them. There were a few

dens that the Dragon King personally had to deal with. But it's unknown why the Monster race focused on the Kingdom of Aixia and there weren't many monsters that appeared in the Kingdoms of Dalu or Xiuda. Thus, the majority of our forces are stationed in the Kingdom of Aixia, while the Dragons and Nature Elves stationed themselves on the side in preparation to support any of the races. The Demon and Beast races were more relaxed. Possibly due to the strong powers that our Human race possesses, the Monster race couldn't help but dispatch a large quantity over to our side so the Demon and Beast races could take it a little easier. The Monster race has been calm for the last few months. Our men have already gathered in the Capital of the Kingdom of Aixia. Not long ago, they passed a message, once you return for you to immediately meet up with them in the Capital of Aixia."

## Chapter 33: Capital of Aixia

I thought, 'The Monster race is peaceful? No, there's always a calm before the storm. If I'm not wrong, then the Monster King is currently reviving.'

"Jian Shan, I'll head to the capital of Aixia now. You guys don't need to head there, there must be some people defending our base. Don't worry, I've already received the Radiant God's inheritance. Even if the Monster King appears, we will surely eliminate him with your assistance in protecting me when I cast spells."

Jian Shan replied, "Zhang Gong, let me come along with you. It should be sufficient for the brothers here to guard the place."

I looked at him. "Alright, then let's head there together. Time is pressing, if I've guessed right then the Monster race will emerge again shortly and will have a large offensive attack. We must quickly meet with the rest to prepare in adapting to the changes." Upon saying that and without wasting time, I immediately drew up a long distance teleportation magic array on the ground.

After drawing the magic array, the sky had turned white and dawn was gradually revealing itself. I instructed the remaining brothers to protect the base as I used my powers to protect Jian Shan and myself before activating the magic array.

A light flashed and we simultaneously disappeared in the magic array.

.....

"Ah! It's really this place." Everything looked so nostalgic. After all, Jian Shan and I were accurately teleported within Aixia... the place I was standing was the Kingdom of Aixia's Advance Magic Academy, the likes of which I studied at before. To me, everything was so familiar and nostalgic. I didn't know how Teacher Zhen and Teacher Di were. Had they participated in battling the Monster race? Ma Ke should have already inherited the throne of the Kingdom of Aixia. How was he?

"Zhang Gong, what's wrong? Did we teleported wrong?" Jian Shan

queried curiously.

I withdrew the divine powers that were emitting from my body as I shook my head, saying, “No, there wasn’t a mistake in the teleportation. It’s just that this place is nostalgic to me. I lived here and even used to study at this very school.”

Jian Shan replied with a smile, “Let’s go, it’s not the time to be reminiscing.”

I withdrew myself from my thoughts and nodded. “Alright, let’s head to the palace now. There definitely will be information of where everyone is.”

Just as Jian Shan wanted to reply, dense sounds of footsteps could be heard. We were already encircled and surrounded. This was one of the Squads from the Royal Mage Union. There was a few hundred mages looking gravely at us. I knew clearly that they could attack us at full force from the light elements shining from their staffs. ‘En! Since there was the baptism of the Monster race, the Mage Union’s response is quite fast! They should have hurried over from the intense magic undulation from the teleportation array.’

The leader, who was an old mage, stepped forth as he asked heavily, “Who are you people?” From the marks on his chest, he was a Magic Scholar and his main magic should be fire.

I smiled as I walked forth. “Don’t make your move. We are on your side. I’m a student from the Royal Advance Magic Academy and just returned using a teleportation array.”

That old mage looked at me dubiously as he asked, “Who do you think you’re lying to? The undulation from the magic array should be from a long distance teleportation magic array. There’s only a handful of people from the Kingdom of Aixia that could use fixed positioning magic array. Tell me, are you related to the Monster race?”

I answered, stunned, “Can it be that I look like I’m from the Monster race?”

That old mage snorted coldly. “There are many people that had their body infiltrated by the Monster race. How do I know you’re not a spy?”

I thought, “His words made me think about Feng Liang Ri and Si Feng Ri. What he says is correct. The Monster King had already controlled many human bodies. I suddenly realised that his suspicion is correct. It seems that I must expose my identity.”

I extended the God’s Guard from my right hand. “You should know that the Monster race can’t cast light magic and I’m a light mage. “Upon saying that, I brandished my right hand, making a white light to soar towards the sky that shone on Jian Shan and I. The light ray that soared to the horizon wasn’t dazzling and was exceptionally gentle.

The old mage cried out, “Holy Light! A Holy Light that didn’t need a chant!”

I nodded. “This should already prove my identity.”

The old man seemed to be excited as he nodded. “Please remove your mask.”

I frowned. “My identity and my mask doesn’t seem to have much relation. I’ve a lot of important matters to settle. Please stop wasting both of our times. Your mission should be to protect the city so that it won’t be invaded by the Monster race, right?”

The old mage smiled. “I don’t have any other intentions. I just wanted to see what the God’s envoy, Zhang Gong Wei, looks like.” His words startled me and the mages that came with him excitement. The previously threatening atmosphere disappeared.

“How did you know that I’m Zhang Gong Wei?”

The old mage replied, “The only one, excluding Principal Lao Lun Di, that can freely use advanced light magic should be you, the Child of Light.”

Under the mages that were nearing me, I smiled wryly and nodded my head. Their passionate gazes on me made me uncomfortable. They couldn’t be wanting to find me for an autograph, right? I glanced at Jian

Shan before replying to that old mage, “You’ve guessed correctly, but we have a lot of matters to attend to now so my apologies.” Upon saying that, I brandished my right hand and after a light shone, Jian Shan and I disappeared before them by using a short teleportation spell.

After a few teleportations, we were already far from the Royal Advance Magic Academy. Jian Shan laughed. “Why are you running?! They don’t have any ill intentions.”

I said, displeased, “There are many matters that we have to settle now. How can I afford to waste time? Let’s go.” Upon saying that, I brought Jian Shan, who came to the Capital of Aixia for the first time, along with me as we rapidly headed towards the palace. I didn’t want to stay at the academy as I was fearful of being tangled up in other business. Who really knew what those people of the Mage Union wanted? I was already fearful after exposing my identity and being tangled up with Princess Fei Yu from the Kingdom of Dalu. There was a proverb that states that humans were scared to be famous like pigs feared to be fat.

# Volume 12

## Chapter 1: Reuniting with Ma Ke

The palace of Aixia slumbered where it stood. The land transformed into a world of gold and jade in a dazzling splendor as the sun rose. After returning, I couldn't calm my heart. I had left Aixia two years ago, but this place was filled with many memories.

"Zhang Gong, why did you zone out again?" Jian Shan's voice rang out beside me. His chest was heaving. He seemed to be exhausted from the time we hurried.

"Jian Shan, has your cultivation deteriorated? It doesn't seem to be as strong as it was before?"

Jian Shan's eyes widened as he finally said, "What? Don't anger me! Who says that my cultivation is inferior to before? Even though I've yet to reach the Sword Saint rank, I'm already one of the top elites among the Radiant Knights. Could you stop comparing me with yourself? Don't forget, you're the God's envoy so you're different from ordinary people like us."

I made a realization after hearing his words. 'That's right. I don't know how much my cultivation has improved by after receiving the inheritance which makes his cultivation seem weaker than before.' I awkwardly replied, "I don't mean that. I'm just trying to coax you into working harder."

Jian Shan snorted. "I'm already working diligently, it's just that at this stage it will be difficult to increase my power; I can only improve slowly from this point on. Didn't you want to get information from the palace? Let's go!"

I nodded and pulled Shan Jian along as I used a short teleportation spell to enter the palace. I easily avoided the patrolling guards and mages by using my acute divine sense. I pulled Jian Shan into the rock garden to

determine my location and what direction to head to because I hadn't come here often, so I wasn't clear on which direction to go after such a long time.

Jian Shan asked me, "Why didn't we enter from the main entrance? Could it be that we can't be seen by anyone?"

I replied, "Isn't this way better so we can speak with Ma Ke quicker? Do you think the guards would have easily let us in if we simply asked?! Time costs us lives, so wouldn't it be better to use less of it?"

Jian Shan pouted. "That seems reasonable. Where are we heading to now?"

I found my bearings and motioned for Jian Shan to be silent. "You just close your eyes and don't worry about a thing." Upon saying that, I brought him along by using another short teleportation spell to quickly enter the inner palace. With my cultivation, how could the guards notice me? After making a couple of turns, we finally reached the location where the Emperor of Aixia lives. I used my divine power to scan the interior and was astonished to find that there wasn't anyone within. 'Ma Ke wasn't here? Where did he go so early in the morning?'

At that moment, two palace maids were heading our way. I hastily pulled Jian Shan along as I flew above them to the corridor ceiling.

The two palace maids whispered while they walked.

"Elder sister, did you see how hard working His Majesty is?! He went to settle the kingdom's affairs so early in the morning. Despite the threat from the Monster race, after His Majesty ascended the throne our kingdom's power has increased daily. Ah! There's also the group of experts from the God Protector Domain helping us. Perhaps we'll be able to surpass the Kingdom of Dalu and become the most powerful of the three kingdoms! It's really a blessing for our Aixia to be governed by such a wise king."

The other palace maid giggled. "Are you yearning for love? Who doesn't like His Majesty? He is youthful, handsome and capable, but, don't even think about it. The love His Majesty and the Empress share is amazing."

His Majesty treats her like a treasure and he never took an imperial concubine until now. I think you should just stop dreaming.”

“You’re irritating. Elder sister only knows how to mock me. Don’t you also want to be doted upon by His Majesty?”

.....

I almost laughed when I heard their conversation. I didn’t know Ma Ke would have so many secret admirers. However, that fellow didn’t let me down and was governing the kingdom well! He should be at the main hall now. I just need to bring Jian Shan along and head there in order find him. I carefully dodged the few groups of patrolling guards and ended up outside the main hall. I sensed many chaotic auras in the main hall. It seemed that there were many people inside. Jian Shan and I looked at each other before I activated my divine power to bring us to the roof of the main hall. I withdrew my thoughts and listened to the voices inside the main hall.

“Your Majesty, even though the situation is highly dangerous, you must not dispatch the Mage Army Squad anymore. It should be sufficient for Lord Ai, Lord Zhen, Lord Di and your friends from the God Protector Domain to be there. We need to leave some protection for the Capital of Aisia after all.” An old voice sounded.

“No, I don’t think it’s enough. I feel that it’s different this time. The Monster race has been too quiet lately and are too opportunistic. They will surely dispatch a large force in the final wave this time, and since their forces are gathered at the fort, this place shouldn’t be in any danger. I already made my decision to personally lead the Royal Mage Army Squad in order to assist them. This is a critical moment. We mustn’t get sentimental, instead we must set an example for the other two kingdoms.” Ma Ke’s undeniably imposing voice sounded. ‘This....is this still the brother that I know? Fort? What’s happening to the fort that he needs to personally head there? Where’s Mu Zi and the rest?’ I continued to listen in as I carried these thoughts.

“But Your Majesty, you are the ruler of our kingdom! This old

subordinate is willing to head forth in your stead.”

“No! My decision is final. Pass down my orders, immediately gather the Royal Magic Army Squad and prepare to set off. Similarly, order the Third Division Mage Army Squad to remain here to protect the Capital. Alright, court dismissed!” After a chorus of sighs, over one hundred officials filed out of the main hall, leaving only a few guards in the main hall. There was a gentle aura beside Ma Ke. It should be Empress Hai Yue Xing.

“Your Majesty, could you reconsider?” Hai Yue said gently.

Ma Ke’s voice became gentler. “Empress, I absolutely can’t cower at such a time. If Boss Zhang Gong was here, he’d definitely support my decision. You shall just have to patiently wait for my return. I’ll certainly bring back news of victory from the annihilation of the Monster race.”

## Chapter 2: Circumstances of the Continent

Hai Yue said resolutely, “No! I will head there with you. I’ve got the power of a Magic Scholar. I may be able to help. How can I not help but worry about you heading out alone? Can you really bear to make me wait bitterly at home?!”

Ma Ke replied gently, “Hai Yue, don’t make things more difficult for me. If you were to go, I will definitely be distracted. I don’t know how risky things will get. If something were to happen to you, what am I supposed to do then? Be obedient, you should stay in the capital.”

Hai Yue replied, “It’s because it’s risky that I refuse to let you head out alone. If you don’t bring me along, I’ll sneak along. You decide.”

“This.....I....Alright.” Ma Ke helplessly conceded.

I smiled inwardly. It seemed that Ma Ke was still unable to deal with Hai Yue even after becoming emperor! I winked at Jian Shan to signal that it was time for our appearance. Instantly, Jian Shan and I appeared at the center of the main hall.

“Who’s there?!” A couple of loud shouts were heard and cold lights shot towards us. The Emperor and Empress of the Kingdom of Aixia were here after all so the security would surely be tight. Naturally, when we appeared, we were treated as assassins. But how could their standard of attacks harm me?

I didn’t need to particularly block them and instead, cast a gentle defensive boundary in my surroundings. When the cold lights struck the boundary, it was naturally pushed back. Since I didn’t intend to harm anyone, the guards weren’t hurt. The surrounding mages were already chanting spells as though they were confronting their nemesis.

I hastily said, “Stop attacking! Ma Ke, after recently becoming king, you already don’t recognize me?”

“Wait!” Ma Ke stopped the attacking mages and stood up from the throne with Hai Yue. They were both in formal attire and stared at my masked face in shock. Ma Ke, who had known me a long time, said in a

shaky voice, “You.. You are....”

I nodded and calmly replied, “That’s right, I’m back.”

“Boss!” Ma Ke charged at me like lightning from his throne. After learning from what happened to Jian Shan, I hastily withdrew my power, tightly embracing Ma Ke. The feelings between Ma Ke and I were like real blood brothers. Our everlasting friendship started from the instant we met.

“Boss, you’re finally back. Do you know how we all suffered waiting for your return?!”

“Sigh! I also didn’t expect that I’d be gone such a long time. Be gentler, it can’t be that you want to crush my bones?”

Ma Ke released his hands from my shoulders. With tears glistening in his eyes, he said, “Boss, it’s great that you’re back. The world changed greatly while you were gone.”

I nodded. “Jian Shan already told me about the appearance of the Monster race. Where’s Mu Zi and the rest now?”

Ma Ke chuckled. “Boss, you really pay more attention to your lover than your friends! You didn’t even ask me how I’ve been. The moment you come, you look for Mu Zi. Sigh! Ai!”

I took back my hand after knocking on Ma Ke’s head as I mockingly scolded him, “You brat, you’re asking for a beating. You’re strong enough to stand so what more should I ask? Since I don’t know where Mu Zi and the rest are, I definitely have to ask. Quickly tell me. If not.....” I rubbed my hands together, giving off cracking sounds. I chuckled as I looked at Ma Ke with ill intentions. The surrounding guards and mages were stunned as they didn’t expect that their revered Majesty would be sorted out by somebody wearing elementary mage attire.

“Hey! Zhang Gong, how can you just bully Ma Ke the moment you return? You bullied him in the past, but now you’re not allowed.” Hai Yue smiled as she walked beside Ma Ke, clinging onto his arm and displaying the appearance of a harmonious couple.

Ma Ke looked affectionately at Hai Yue as he said lovingly, “My wife is the best.”

I could be unrestrained with Ma Ke, but I couldn’t with Hai Yue. Not to mention that she was a girl, not to mention the matter with Hai Shui. I couldn’t help but fear Hai Yue’s temper. I quickly smiled apologetically. “On behalf of Hai Yue, I’ll forgive you this time. But can you quickly tell me the locations of everyone? I’m in a hurry! Time is pressing, the Monster race can make a huge movement anytime now. We must preemptively prepare to deal with them.”

When I mentioned the Monster race, Ma Ke’s expression changed as he slightly nodded and replied, “Boss, that’s what I thought. It has been very calm lately, but five days ago, there was an urgent report from the Ström Fortress. The report stated that various monsters were surging outwards rapidly from the massive rift you previously created. The monsters that spawned were at an unprecedented number and had exceptionally strong offensive capability. Our side was better off, the protection from the fort and the magic cannons to temporarily defended against them. But the Demon-Beast Alliance’s losses are increasing daily. Mu Zi and your brothers already led the God Protector Domain to the fort to eliminate the source of the monsters. But I don’t think this time will be that simple. Why would the Monster race choose to appear at the borders surrounded by all three races? That position can’t be beneficial to them, they would be attacked by all three races! It can’t be that they have sufficient powers to resist us, right? We’ve been at an advantage ever since the Dragons and Nature Elves appeared! I really don’t know what they are thinking.”

I sighed. “Perhaps this final battle will determine which side will be victorious. The Monster King should really be appearing.” It was no wonder that I could feel the surge of demonic aura since coming from the God Rended Canyon, the Monster race had decided to emerge from the rift.

Ma Ke and Hai Yue were alarmed and looked at each other. After a while, Ma Ke spoke with some difficulty, “Boss, are you saying that the Monster King will appear?”

I replied, “En! Ma Ke, in the last two years, have you exchanged blows with the three Great Monsters as you fought the Monster race?”

Ma Ke replied, “Only once, but they were run off by Xiao Jin’s father. There wasn’t any more movement from them after that.”

## Chapter 3: Outside the Capital City

“It seems that my judgement wasn’t wrong. The monster race hasn’t been fighting with all their might. They were hiding their power, waiting for their king to revive. By my calculations, the Monster King should be appearing soon.”

Ma Ke asked, “Boss, are you saying that the Monster King will be appearing at the fort?”

I nodded. “He should. The Monster King possesses peerless power. He made his subordinates attack the three races from the gulf in order to create an opportunity for him to appear. Once the main forces of the three main races are eliminated, he can slowly dominate the entire world. Monster King, I definitely won’t let you win.” I clenched my fists and made my body surge forth with an intense desire to do battle. Both Ma Ke and Hai Yue, who were in front of me, were momentarily pushed back a few steps as a faint golden light shone from my body.

Ma Ke looked at me with amazement. “Boss, your cultivation improved again. Could it be that you’ve already.....”

I nodded. “Yes, I’ve succeeded.”

Ma Ke was jubilant. “That’s great! Boss, the army of my Kingdom shall fall under your leadership. Let’s head to the fort and eliminate the Monster race.”

I shook my head. “Leading the army isn’t my forte. You should do it. Any commander from Aixia are surely stronger than me in that area. That’s right, I heard that the teachers are already on the frontline. Is that true?”

Ma Ke replied, “That’s right! The teachers, Mu Zi and the rest are already there. Boss, don’t be modest. With your current power, you are the most suitable for commanding the Mage Army Squad.”

I said, “Ma Ke, I must head to the fort as soon as possible and bringing along a large amount of troops will slow my pace. We also aren’t sure how the situation is like at the fort. You should immediately gather your

Mage Army and head over to rendezvous with everyone after I leave.”

Hai Yue suddenly asked, “Zhang Gong, how do you plan on dealing with my sister? My sister has made nothing of the hardships to head to the God Protector Domain. She had abandoned her privileged life for you and fought daily alongside your brothers against the Monster King.” Hai Yue got agitated, feeling indignant.

After hearing her mentioned Hai Shui, my entire body shuddered as I said dejectedly, “I’ve let her down. I’m incompatible with her so I won’t ruin her life!”

Hai Yue fumed. “That’s only an excuse. Do you even understand my sister’s feelings? How could she care about your appearance? I don’t care you must give me a satisfactory response. If not, never forgive you.”

I smiled wryly. “Hai Yue, I know Hai Shui treats me well, but.....forget it, this discussion should be in the future. We should first eliminate the Monster King. The existence of the Monster race is an imminent threat, how can I talk about relationships in a time like this?”

Hai Yue’s expression relaxed as she nodded. “Alright, I’ll wait for your reply. You must take care of my sister when you meet up with her at the fort. Don’t let her be in harm’s way. Do you understand?”

I nodded. “I certainly will. I don’t want anyone hurt. You do understand that, Hai Yue?”

Hai Yue smiled. “Of course, I understand. If it wasn’t for your help, Ma Ke and I wouldn’t be together, so I know. Ma Ke is the best choice for me.”

I thought about the words that Feng Liang Ri said before he died, but I didn’t reveal it. I didn’t want it to influence Hai Yue and Ma Ke’s feelings after they developed after so many difficulties, instead covering them with shadow. ‘Feng Liang! I’m sorry. I hope that you’ll be a good person in your next life.’

When Ma Ke wanted to say something, someone suddenly shouted from outside. “Reporting to Your Majesty! I have urgent news!”

Ma Ke frowned. “Come in, report.”

A soldier hastily ran in and knelt. “Your Majesty, it isn’t good. There are two monster dens that have appeared within 5 kilometres of the capital and the monsters have started causing destruction in every direction.”

Ma Ke was stunned. “What? The monster race has appeared? Can it be that we guessed wrongly?” He looked at me slightly panicked, obviously shaken up by the report. Even though it couldn’t be said that the Kingdom of Aixia had no fighting force, but since our God Protector Domain had been mobilized and neither the Dragons nor Nature Elves were around, he could only rely on his Royal Mage Army Squad.

I muttered irresolutely, “Ma Ke, don’t be anxious. Our prediction should be correct. The Monster race’s appearance had increased the credibility of my hypothesis. I think that this situation should also be occurring in the Kingdoms of Dalu and Xiuda. The Monster race must be trying to decrease the forces at the fort. You should immediately gather the Royal Magic Army troops while you wait for my report. You can leave those two monster dens to me.” I was confident. ‘Isn’t it just two monster dens? Eliminating them shouldn’t be too difficult.’

Ma Ke asked, “Boss, how can you head out by yourself? Bring me along.”

I smiled. “Ma Ke, don’t worry. Those monsters aren’t a threat to me. That’s right, I’ll leave Jian Shan in your care, so wait for my return. Once I’m back, we’ll immediately head to the fort.” Upon saying that, I used a short teleportation to teleport from the main hall. I activated my divine powers at once to soar through the sky, quickly leaving the Capital.

The sky was filled with an intense Demonic aura. The previously clear sky was now covered with heavy, sinister clouds, giving an oppressive feeling. After distinguishing my direction, I moved like a shooting star towards my destination.

Soon, I saw densely packed monsters that climbed out from two enormous, black monster dens, which were about 300 meters away. The monsters that climbed out scattered in search of prey. Those monsters were built much larger than what I saw before. The only similarity was

their bloodshot eyes. There were a few villages near the dens so numerous monsters gathered towards those villages, commencing a massacre. A couple of humans died under the monsters in the blink of an eye, leaving no corpses behind. Since the Kingdom of Aixia had many mages, there were definitely people that knew magic in those villages. Unfortunately, their negligible powers were useless against the monsters, making them unable to kill them.

## Chapter 4: Holy Sword's Might

The blood in my body raced as I frantically activated the powers in my body. I raised both of my hands and chanted, "Great light elements! You possess unlimited power, the darkness before you is negligible. The eternal light that is flowing in the horizon, I beg of you, descend upon the world to bestow your eternal light unto me to recover all injuries and ease us of our sufferings—Eternal Recovery Light!" Six wings of light appeared on my back, as they flapped gently, clear lights constantly and rapidly gathering towards me. I didn't feel the previous pain of being ripped apart, instead it felt like I was soaking in an ocean of light. It was an indescribable, yet comfortable feeling. The light elements were very cordial, they listened to my commands completely, forming an enormous gold hexagon underneath my feet, lighting up the dark sky instantly.

The divine filled aura attracted the attention of all of the monsters beneath me. Those that could fly were charging towards me. The threat that I posed made those cold blooded fiends terrified.

I didn't hold any killing intent, the warm light elements were constantly purifying my heart. I said calmly, "Go forth, Eternal Recovery Light." The gold hexagon beneath my feet slightly shook, creating an enormous golden pillar of light that enclosed my body as it charged towards the sky and pierced through the clouds.

The clouds in the sky turned golden. A rain of light that eliminates the monsters and saves human lives immediately descended. At this moment, hundreds of monsters were already charging towards me, seemingly wanting to rip me apart.

I looked at the golden clouds in the sky before raising my outstretched arms. A golden halo momentarily surged from my body towards the monsters that were charging over. The golden light seemed to be unaffected as it passed through the bodies of the monsters. However, the monsters that touched the golden light stopped mid-air as their bodies gradually turned to dust.

The fragrance in the air was exceptionally pleasant. I, who had received

the inheritance, wouldn't be weakened after using forbidden spells. Moreover, I could also bring out the full powers of the forbidden spell, making the spell's scope much larger.

The light drizzle descended from the sky, it gently danced with the wind as it scattered onto the ground. Each of the light spots carried vitality within it, enclosing both the monster dens and the monsters that were charging to the villages below.

The drizzle gradually got larger as it constantly flowed downwards. The monsters had already stopped their attack as the light rain appeared. I saw their bodies gradually turned to shadowy auras under the light rain and disappeared. I could also see that the monsters looked as though they had been relieved of their burdens.

The light rain not only harmed the monsters, but it also treated the bodies of the survivors. The villagers that were previously in despair cheered. I chanted gently, "The God King bestowed upon me the Radiant Holy Sword. It shall shine with the soaring radiance of the vault of the heavens."

My chest heated up and the silver Holy Sword instantly appeared before me. I stretched out my right hand that had the God's Guard to gently grasp the Holy Sword before descending towards the monster dens. Since the Eternal Recovery Light was still in effect, there wouldn't be any monsters to further appear. I urged the divine powers in my body to intensify the light from the Holy Sword.

"Annihilate!" As I yelled, the Holy Light gave off two intense silver lights that were aimed towards the monster dens. With a flash, the powers shot into the dens. I could finally use the full might of the Holy Sword. As the Holy Sword's power had reached the deepest part of the dens, numerous mournful cries were heard. I closed my eyes and softly spoke, "Break."

The originally black monster dens were now filled with a silver light. The ground quaked. I had restricted the power of the Holy Sword to only within the monster dens, I didn't want to hurt the remaining villagers.

Numerous muffled sounds were heard, but the monster dens no longer had a sliver of demonic aura, which meant that I had successfully eliminated them.

I took in a deep breath before using my divine power to say, “Citizens of the kingdom of Aixia. Your suffering is over. There’ll be people dispatched to take care of the after mess. I hope that you can recover your homes as soon as possible. I’m God’s envoy, Zhang Gong Wei.”

“Child of light!.....Long live the Child of Light!.....” The remaining people were frantically cheering. Seeing their excited looks, I couldn’t help but be gratified. Similarly, I felt sadness for those that had died. Monster race, why must you take the lives in this world?!

Even though the monster dens were eliminated and that the sun had once again lit the ground, I could clearly feel an enormous demonic aura that had risen from the direction of the fort. It should be the revival of the Monster King. His revival threatens all the races of the world. It seemed that the final battle was commencing.

I flapped the six wings on my back to fly towards the Capital.

Ma Ke had already gathered the Royal Mage Army Squad as he waited for me at the outskirts. He was very anxious, obviously worrying about the two monster dens. I withdrew the light wings from my back and descended.

“Ma Ke!”

“Boss, how is it?” Ma Ke asked urgently.

I nodded. “Don’t worry. I’ve already settled the matter there. Ma Ke, you don’t have to head to the fort. It’s enough for me to head there. With the God Protector Domain, Dragon race, and the Nature Elves’ help, our power there should be enough. You should quickly lead the Magic Army Squad to split into two groups for the Kingdoms of Xiuda and Dalu and assist them in eliminating the monster dens.” My firm voice didn’t contain any uncertainty. Ma Ke nodded, but traces of worry was still seen in his eyes.

I patted his shoulders. “Don’t worry, my good brother! The Monster race won’t succeed unless I die. What was meant to come will definitely come. The situation at Dalu and Xiuda should be very dangerous now. With their power, the monster dens will cause major casualties. You should head there as soon as possible.”

“Boss, I will.”

At this moment, an exceptionally familiar and friendly feeling came to me from the sky’s horizon. I raised my head to see a gold figure floating in the sky. My entire body jolted. ‘That....Isn’t that Xiao Jin? Why is he here?’

## Chapter 5: Long Distance Teleportation

Ma Ke also saw Xiao Jin. “Boss, I forgot to tell you that when Mu Zi and the rest left, they left Xiao Jin and the little fox with nine tails here. They also left a message that if you came back, you’re to immediately ride on Xiao Jin to meet up with them at the fort. The light powers from when you previously eliminated the monster’s dens must have attracted them over.”

Ah! He was referring to Xiao Jin and Xiao Rou. My elated feelings rose in my chest once again as I let out a loud roar towards the sky unable to contain my longing for Xiao Jin.

Xiao Jin’s deep and resounding roar rang out shortly after I yelled. As the two sounds collided in the sky and spread far into the distance, Xiao Jin’s body slowly enlarged as he charged towards me. I kicked off of the ground to fly into the sky and receive him. Xiao Jin and I had a blood bonded connection, as well we had experienced life and death together numerous times. We had pulled through the tough times together, Xiao Jin’s position in my heart was extremely prominent.

Xiao Jin seemed to have matured a lot. His enormous dragon body had increased in length and the gold scales on his body were emitting a dazzling golden light. When he expanded his enormous wings, he glided downwards as his enormous eyes glistened with tears. Xiao Jin and I had never been separated for such a long time. I felt a hot feeling from my chest as I shouted, “Xiao Jin!” I no longer cared about my shocking hidden prowess, with my six wings protruding, my speed drastically increased to charge towards Xiao Jin.

“Master!” Xiao Jin’s tears flowed. I wanted to embrace his large head but discovered that his head was too huge to embrace so I landed on his head.

“Master!” Another charming voice came over. Xiao Rou came over with her nine tails. “Ah! Master, your body’s aura is making me feel so comfortable!” Xiao Rou’s body changed into her squirrel-like form to leap onto my shoulder. Her fluffy large tail tickled a bit.

“Xiao Jin, I finally see you again. I really missed you.” I caressed Xiao Jin’s long horn as I sighed.

Xiao Jin’s grief stricken voice sounded, “Since you missed me, why didn’t you bring me along previously, instead of making me bitterly wait for you to return for such a long time?”

I wiped the tears from my face that were flowing unknowingly to me as I laughed. “Alright, this isn’t the time to be reminiscing. You both wait for me here.” Upon saying that, I took Xiao Rou from my shoulder and placed her on Xiao Jin’s back before I leaped downwards.

“Ma Ke, you should hastily set off now. After eliminating the danger that the two kingdoms are facing, you need only wait for us here for good news.”

Ma Ke’s eye rim reddened. “Boss, be careful!”

Hai Yue reminded, “Don’t forget what I told you to do.”

I nodded. “Don’t worry. Farewell.” Upon saying that, I flew back onto Xiao Jin’s back. “Let’s head to a quiet place before chatting again.”

Xiao Jin flapped both of his wings. Even though he wasn’t as fast as I was, it was already remarkable. Xiao Rou stuck to my chest as she greedily absorbed the divine aura emitting from my body. “Master, I’ve missed you. Let me show you my human form.”

I was shocked as I remembered the previous Xiao Rou’s charming and lovable appearance. I hastily shook my head. “I think it’s better not to. Isn’t your current appearance good enough?”

Xiao Jin snickered. “Master, don’t you know Xiao Rou has been secretly admiring you? Hehe! Aiyo! Master, stop hitting me. What I say is true.”

Wasn’t Xiao Jin giving me more trouble? I hadn’t settled matters with Hai Shui, not to mention Demon Fox Xiao Rou. However, I was exceptionally elated to see Xiao Jin again. Even though the Dragon King had terminated our contract when he previously recovered the life force of Xiao Jin, making Xiao Jin to cease existing as my Magical Beast, the feelings between Xiao Jin and I never changed. Actually, if Xiao Jin was

still my life contracted beast, he might have even stronger powers since I became the new Radiant God. If he could possess what I possess, wouldn't that mean that there would be two Radiant Gods?

I looked at the Squirrel-like Xiao Rou at my chest, who had her head lowered in shyness. I snappily said to Xiao Jin, "Alright, let's head downwards!"

"Oh!" Xiao Jin replied and withdrew his wings, heading towards an open ground.

When we landed, Xiao Jin asked curiously, "Master, why have we descended? Sister Mu Zi specifically instructed me that if you were to return, I must immediately fly you to meet up with them. The Monster race also seemed to have reemerged again."

I nodded. "I know, that's why I made you land to increase our speed. Xiao Jin and Xiao Rou, please protect me. I plan to use a long distance teleportation magic array."

Xiao Jin blinked his large eyes. "Master, you've already received the Radiant God's inheritance? Are you sure that the magic array can move my enormous body?"

En! There was this problem as I looked at Xiao Jin's mountain-like body. I pondered. "I have already completely inherited the Radiant God's position. My power should be enough to teleport us to the fort. Xiao Jin, how is Mu Zi and everyone?"

Xiao Jin replied, "Everyone misses you. However, they seemed to be very displeased that you left without saying a word, so if you meet them, be careful. Your friends have become increasingly powerful after eliminating a lot of the monster dens with their divine instruments. They were so great that even my dad praises them unceasingly."

When he mentioned the Dragon King, I hastily asked, "I'm really sorry to trouble your Dragon race this time, interrupting your father and the rest's peaceful life."

Xiao Jin smiled. "No, it won't. Everyone wishes to meet you again. After

you gave them their names, they were very grateful. Moreover, our Dragon race is one of the races in this world. If the world faces the threat of the Monster race, it's our duty to assist. Otherwise, if the major races were to be eliminated and couldn't support the other races, our Dragon race will also be eliminated sooner or later."

I asked, "Where did your father bring the Dragon race to now?"

## Chapter 6: Arriving at the Stronghold

Xiao Jin considered my question before saying, "Currently, the Nature Elves are still stationed on the human's side, but Father brought my relatives to the fort. They should have met up with Sister Mu Zi. They should be reaching the fort in a couple of days. I heard that the amount of monsters coming out from the gulf is far beyond the quantity of ten monster dens. If it wasn't for the magic cannons at the fort, it would have fallen into the enemy's hands. The Demon and Beast races are worse off, their losses won't be small."

I slightly nodded. "Alright, I'll draw the magic array now. Guard me while I'm doing it." Upon saying that, I started to draw up a long distance teleportation spell for the third time today.

Xiao Jin and Xiao Rou seemed to like the golden aura radiating from my body while they comfortably lay by my side. In this empty space anything could be seen from afar, so I couldn't blame them for slacking off.

I finished drawing up the array and set the target close to the fort so I would only have to fly a short distance to reach the fort. After completing the long distance teleportation magic array, I felt a slight tiredness, but didn't mind it. After receiving the inheritance, I had already cast two long distance teleportation magics, a forbidden spell, and used the Holy Sword's power. It was inevitable for me to be slightly tired, God wasn't omnipotent!

'I don't have enough divine power to bring Xiao Jin's large body along with me in the long distance teleportation spell right now. What should I do?' Thinking quickly, I hastily circulated the divine power in my body. Xiao Jin and Xiao Rou were astonished as they saw the six wings that appeared on my back. I closed my eyes and relied on their supportive power to absorb the light elements in my surroundings, continuously converting the light elements into divine power, replenishing it.

After a long while, I finally recovered my peak state. After taking a deep breath and opening my eyes, I saw that Xiao Jin and Xiao Rou were about 100 meters from where they had previously lain.

“Why have you two retreated so far away?” I asked surprised.

“Master, it’s not that we wanted to retreat, but your power is so great that it pushed us!” Xiao Jin replied helplessly.

Xiao Rou said, “Thank you, Master.”

I withdrew my protective powers. “What did you thank me for? Hurry over, I’m going to activate the magic array. Let’s head to the fort.”

Xiao Rou bounced excitedly to my side and leapt on my shoulder as she whispered, “Master, after evolving to have nine tails, my power was always stuck at the very last step before the peak realm. After seeing you today, your vast powers have helped me achieve that last step. How could I not thank you?”

I smiled. “We’re friends. What’s there to thank? Alright, let’s get ready. Xiao Jin, quickly come over. Stop dallying.”

Xiao Jin approached hesitantly into the magic array as he asked dubiously, “Master, will this really work?”

I mockingly chided him, “Of course it will. Just use your powers to protect yourself and leave the rest to me.”

“Master, please wait a moment!” Xiao Rou suddenly called out as I was preparing to activate the magic array.”

Stunned, I asked, “What’s wrong, Xiao Rou?”

Xiao Rou lowered her head and muttered, “Master, I have something that I want to request your help with.”

“Say it.”

“Master, I’ve already reached the peak realm of a Demon Fox. I’m thinking that when you have free time, could you assist me during my final evolution?”

I dazed as I remembered Xiao Rou’s previously mentioned transformation skills. “Xiao Rou, didn’t you say that method is a little risky? What form do you want to take?”

Xiao Rou hesitated before her bright gaze resolutely focused on me. “Master, I want to shed my Demon Fox body and become a human, just like Mu Zi and Hai Shui. Master, please accept my request. With your current power, there shouldn’t be any problems with you helping me transform my body.”

I thought, ‘It seems that Xiao Jin’s previous chatter wasn’t a complete fabrication, but her wish isn’t such a bad thing.’ I nodded. “Alright, I promise that I’ll help you gather the things that you need in order to become a human after we eliminate the Monster race.”

Xiao Rou leapt with joy after she heard my agreement. “That’s great! Master, thank you.” She used her fluffy little head to constantly rub against my face. My heart warmed, I could feel her brimming with excitement.

My expression changed after a moment. “Let’s head out now. Xiao Jin and Xiao Rou, prepare yourselves.” Upon saying that, I raised my right hand high into the air as I activated my divine power. The God’s Guard on my right hand instantly released a golden light. The light enclosed us and I glanced at Xiao Rou before roaring out to activate the magic array. Once the light flashed, a human and two beasts disappeared from the empty field.

Even though the interior dimension of the teleportation spell was colourful, we didn’t have the heart to enjoy the view. Long distance teleportation magic was extremely dangerous. If there was something that went wrong, we might appear in an unknown location by the warping of space. Xiao Jin’s body really was too big, I was enduring a pressure three times greater than before. If I wasn’t filled with divine power, I wouldn’t have been able to withstand the pressure.

We finally reached the end of the magic array and returned back to the world after a second flash of light.

‘Hmm? Why are we constantly descending? Ah! The teleportation magic array actually teleported us in mid air.’ When I looked downwards, I was shocked to see that the place we were at was right above the gulf that the

brothers and I previously created using our ultimate forbidden spell. Numerous monsters were constantly climbing out from it. I must have teleported us here from being slightly tired, caused by an error where I drew the portion for the exit location in the magic array. However, it wasn't all bad, we were still near the fort.

Once I collected my thoughts, I activated the divine power to stabilize my body. Xiao Jin had already expanded his wings to stop mid air. My body floated over above his back before I could survey the affairs in my surroundings.

## Chapter 7: The Three Great Monster Lords

I looked downwards and noticed that there were various types of monsters that covered the vast plains in front of Ström Fortress. The monsters looked like waves as they relentlessly charged and struck towards Ström Fortress. Ear-piercing explosive sounds could be heard constantly from the heights of the city walls beyond the fort. Multiple blasts were fired from the magic cannons towards the monsters, creating a reign of terror as the magnificent spells descended from the fort. There were no monsters strong enough to break into the 300 meter radius of the fort. It seemed that the fort's defences could still be sustained for a while. I looked at the border of the Demon-Beast Alliance and saw that the number of monsters heading to their battlefield was slightly less than ours. However, the monsters still managed to invade into part of their lands. It was unknown how the Demon and Beast races were going to deal with them.

Since I arrived, I decided help everyone eradicate this problem. I patted Xiao Jin's head. "Xiao Jin, take Xiao Rou with you and head to the fort first. Tell everyone of my arrival. I want to let the monsters see my prowess before heading to the fort." Upon saying that, I lept high up and spread the six wings on my back, stabilizing my body mid air. Xiao Jin flapped his wings downwards, killing numerous monsters with a surge of his dragon powers.

"The God King bestowed upon me the Radiant Holy Sword. It shall shine with the soaring radiance of the vault of the heavens." Upon chanting the incantation, a brilliant light radiated from my body. The silver Holy Sword floated before me and its aura intensifying after I grabbed its hilt. The surrounding light elements were rapidly gathering around me. I became like a sun in the sky, illuminating the land.

The speed of the monster's movements seemingly slowed beneath me. Even though my power was insufficient to eradicate all of the monsters, I could critically damage their source. With a furious gaze, I roared, making the surrounding light elements frantically swirl around me like a tornado. Divine power rippled outwardly, with me as its center. The

monsters below were crying out mournfully as they disappeared one after another under the might of the divine power.

My body turned completely golden with a halo of light that coalesced around my body. I wasn't affected in the slightest from the light elements frantically revolving around me.

I grasped the Holy Sword with both my hands and the transparent gemstone on God's Guard gave off peculiar lights. Divine power poured out from God's Guard and into the Holy Sword, making the Holy Sword's aura intensify. As its aura strengthened, it gradually fused into the revolving light elements.

As my eyes unknowingly turned golden, I yelled, "Radiant Holy Sword: Holy Light Slash!" With the sudden downward swing of my arms, the Holy Sword seemed to carry a tremendous power that could link heaven and earth. The power formed a beautiful arc through the sky as it charged towards the depths of the gulf.

Once the Holy Sword's power reached the ground, every monster within 500 meters disintegrated into ash. 'Hong!' With a flash of the silver light that vanished into the gulf, it took more than 10,000 monsters along with it.

The gates of Ström Fortress suddenly flew open and a few thousand figures charged out like lightning, efficiently massacring the monsters that had temporarily lost the source of their powers. Under the glittering light of various battle spirits, the bodies of many monsters were continuously being hacked down. Those people were my brothers from the God Protector Domain and behind them were the Earth Dragon Army Squad and cavalry from the Kingdom of Dalu. Under magic protection, they filed outwards, mobilizing tens of thousands of troops and frantically slayed the sluggish monsters. I knew that victory was on our side today.

Suddenly, the gulf below became unusually calm and the monsters no longer surged out from it. I knew clearly, that with that previous attack, I could annihilate the ordinary monsters. However, when dealing with such a large scale monster den, it would be impossible to completely

extinguish their source.

Right as I wanted to strike with the Holy Sword again, three grey auras suddenly flew out from the gulf and were charging towards me with lightning speed.

“Zhang Gong, be careful!” A clear shout containing anxiousness and concern could be heard from the field.

I didn’t have time to spare any attention to see who warned me. The Holy Sword spun around my body as it charged, meeting the grey auras head on. ‘Hong!’ The powerful impact shook both my body and the divine power within. My vision turned white and a mouthful of silver blood spurt from my mouth. A silvery aura came from the Ice God’s Mask, chilling my face and stabilizing my confused state. ‘Such strength! Could it be that the Monster King has resurrected?’

The divine power in my body continuously repaired my injuries and the light elements surrounding me replenished the loss of my divine powers. Once I stabilized my body, I realised that I had been flung at least a kilometer back due to the impact. I, who had received the Radiant God’s inheritance, was unexpectedly hurt. The three grey figures suddenly stopped before me. With a flash of grey light, their true appearances were revealed.

At the center was the Dark Monster—Jia Si Ke Li Duo, who had initially possessed Demon King’s Satan’s body. He looked at me astonished with his dark monster blade placed horizontally before him. There was also a faint trace of green blood that flowed from his mouth. It seemed that he was also hurt from the previous exchange. On his left was a person that was completely enshrouded in a large cloak, making it impossible for me to see their appearance. Using the memories of Mi Jia Lie, I knew that this person...no, this monster was the Witch Monster—Ha Er Yue Di. The one on the right, whose body was enclosed in a bloody mist, must be the Blood Monster—Ka An Da Er Jia. It seemed that it wasn’t the revival of the Monster King, but rather a gathering of the Three Great Monsters.

Jia Si Ke Li Duo laughed. “Good brat, you were able to receive a

combined attack from the three of us. It seems that you really have inherited Mi Jia Lie's powers."

I coldly snorted. "Jia Si Ke Li Duo, do you really think that you three are powerful? In my eyes, you're nothing."

"Brat, you're seeking death. Blood Monster's Spirit Severance!" The Blood Monster Ka An Da Er Jia, bringing a thick blood mist with him, charged towards me, with the flash of a red light. I roared, "Holy Light Crucifix!" Two silver light rays intersected perpendicularly and shot forth as I grasped the Radiant Holy Sword with both hands.

## Chapter 8: Repelling the Monster Clan

“Dark Monster’s Caress!” Jia Si Ke Li Duo swung the Dark Monster’s Blade, shooting a grey light ray towards the Holy Light Crucifix, while the Witch Monster Ha Er Yue Di’s body swayed as he let out a low and unpleasant growl, forming a black bone-shaped mist to counterattack. Their power, combined with the Blood Monster Ka Yan An Da Er’s attack, simultaneously struck my Holy Light Crucifix.

The four of our bodies were momentarily blown away after a loud explosion was heard. My entire body felt feeble and I spat out another mouthful of blood. I knew that my body’s injuries had worsened. They really were worthy of the title the Three Great Monsters, even after I received the Radiant God’s inheritance, I still couldn’t deal with their combined attack. It seemed that they had recovered more than the 30% of their powers that Mi Jia Lie had predicted. If the Monster King were to join them, it would probably end with my death.

“Night Sky’s Sea Green Heart” A green light that seemed to be from the heavens came in a long and elegant arc as it passed my body striking Jia Si Ke Li Duo. Jia Si Ke Li Duo obviously hadn’t recovered from our exchange was in a panic, he could only lift his Dark Monster’s Blade to block the attack. However, the green ray’s speed was rapid. Even though it was partially blocked by the Dark Monster’s blade, the ray still pierced Jia Si Ke Li Duo’s shoulder. Jie Si Ke Li Duo furiously roared as he radiated large amounts of grey mist before charging towards the gulf with the two other Great Monsters.

Since I was injured, I didn’t chase after them, but instead turned around and saw a green figure flying over. The person who had gravely wounded Jia Si Ke Li Duo and rescued me from the crisis was Dong Ri. A thick divine aura was surrounded Dong Ri’s. Even though it still was relatively weak compared to mine, there was already great improvement when compared to the previous me. He already learned how to use skills of the Wind God’s Bow. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to severely hurt Jia Si Ke Li Duo.

“Dong Ri!”

“Big Brother Zhang Gong, you’re finally back. If you didn’t return, we might not be able to hold out much longer.” Dong Ri dashed in front of me excitedly and tightly grasped my shoulders.

I looked at the gulf and found that it had regained its usual peace. It seemed that the Monster race wouldn’t act up for the moment. “Where’s everyone? Why didn’t they come?” I asked as if Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest came with Dong Ri, with our combined powers, we might be able to prevent the escape of the Three Great Monsters.

Dong Ri smiled wryly. “It’s not that they didn’t want to come, but were unable. The Three Great Monsters have ambushed the fort twice. Excluding me, Zhan Hu, Xiu Si, Gao De, and Xin Ao are all suffering from severe injuries. While two of the five elders sacrificed themselves, Sister Mu Zi had also suffered slight injuries. We were currently in a life or death situation. If it weren’t for you returning in time, the defenses of the fort would have crumbled after sustaining another attack from the Three Great Monsters.”

I was shocked by his words and cried out, “What? Two of the elders sacrificed themselves?”

Dong Ri solemnly nodded. “Let’s go. We’ll continue after we head back. Everyone is waiting for you.” He looked enviously at the wings on my back and sighed, “You must have gotten the Radiant God’s power. If not, you wouldn’t be able to force the Three Great Monsters to retreat.”

I was now burning with anxiety. I didn’t reply, but simply pulled him along as I flapped my wings rapidly, as we headed towards the fort.

It was probably due to the retreat of the monsters that joyful cheers were constantly ringing out from the fort. Colourful flags were being waved at the top of the city. The people felt they gained a new lease of life after facing the Monster race, it was the best time for people to get excited. The battlefield had already calmed down and the monsters that had already lost half of their power were already annihilated. The human army orderly retreated back to the fort, under the protection of the

brothers from the God Protector Domain.

With a flash of a light, I brought Dong Ri along as we reached the top of the fort. The numerous high-ranking military officers from the three kingdoms surrounded me. If it weren't for the protection of my divine power, I would have been squashed by them.

"Everyone, please don't be so anxious. Please, calm down." It seemed that it was an error to land on top of the fort. I surveyed my surroundings, but didn't see Mu Zi's figure nor even a single brother from the God Protector Domain.

"God's Envoy, you are finally back."

"Ah! Humanity has hope now. Lord Envoy, thank you for chasing the enemy away."

.....

Dong Ri said, "Stop looking, nobody is here. They went to recuperate from their injuries. The brothers here are under my command, they went to exterminate monster dens so you won't be able to see them yet."

I was stunned at this news. "Why didn't you say that earlier? Where's Mu Zi and the rest? Quickly, bring me to them now." I was extremely anxious after hearing that everyone was hurt. I really wanted to fly to Mu Zi's side. Two elders had also sacrificed themselves. I didn't know how the elders were now. They must be upset. It was all my fault for being unable to return in time.

Dong Ri replied, feeling wronged, "You didn't ask me! I'll bring you there now."

Just as we wanted to leave, an elderly voice was heard. Even though it was soft, it had completely suppressing the clamoring surroundings. "Zhang Gong, when have you become so impolite? Why aren't you coming to greet the numerous elders here?"

I was stunned and looked at the direction of the voice. The blood in my entire body stilled at that moment. I was dazed and couldn't let out my voice. Numerous tears were shed behind my mask, dampening my slightly

tattered clothes. The two people that were standing where the sound was heard were two white haired mages. One was my teacher, the Aixia's Royal Intermediate Magic Academy's principal, Teacher Lao Lun Di and the other was Aixia's Royal Advance Magic Academy's principal, Teacher Chuan Song Zhen.

The person that spoke previously was Teacher Zhen, while Teacher Di stood at his side, his body slightly trembling, not saying a word. Time's baptism could clearly be seen from the visible fine wrinkles on his face. To me, Teacher Di was like a father as he cared for me and taught me how to be a person and a mage. I instantly knew that I was the reason why that old man had aged so much. I could repress my feelings no longer and knelt to the ground towards Teacher Di as I cried out, crying bitterly, "Teacher!"

## Chapter 9: Reuniting with Teacher

The surrounding high-ranking military officers of the three kingdoms were stunned. Even though they knew that I was from the Kingdom of Aixia, they weren't clear of the details on my background. Under the support of Teacher Zhen, Teacher Di trudged towards me in tears. He walked extremely slowly. My heart constantly trembled with each of the old man's steps. "Teacher...Teacher Di, I...."

When Teacher Di finally walked before me, I had already withdrawn the protective divine powers. Teacher Di wordlessly extended his wrinkled hands to caress my head. "Child, teacher finally gotten a chance to meet you."

That short phase had greatly touched my heart. 'That's right, my teacher. I've also finally reunited with you.'

It took a long time for me to gradually calm my heart. As I knelt, I said to him, "Teacher, have you been well all these years?"

Teacher Di nodded. With tears in his eyes, Teacher Zhen said, "How could he be fine? It's all your fault. Old fellow Lao Lun hasn't been at ease ever since you left. He kept harping to me about you on a daily basis that he didn't have enough spare thought in attending his duties as principal. You had done poorly at being his disciple. If it wasn't for the news of you helping in the negotiations of the three races at the fort to succeed, he probably still wouldn't be at ease even now. You brat, then once you left, it was two years before you finally return."

Teacher Di glared at Teacher Zhen, preventing him from saying anything further. Teacher Di spoke benevolently to me, "Child, quickly get up and let teacher have a look." Upon saying that, he supported me up. Teacher's hands were still as warm as before. I couldn't help but call out, "Teacher Di!"

"Zhang Gong, you didn't let teacher down. I've seen what you have done previously. Tell me, have you already reached the legendary Grand Magister realm?"

I nodded. "That's correct, teacher. I have."

Teacher Di suddenly raised his back and broke out into laughters. His laughter was transmitted to the sky. "Great! Great! Great! You're worthy of being my disciple. My many years of aspiration have finally been achieved by you. Good child, you're really my great disciple."

Feeling Teacher Di's happiness, Teacher Zhen smiled as he sighed, "Lao Lun, you finally broke clear from all of your troubles and hardships. I'm so envious of you!"

Teacher Di replied in smiles, "What's there to be envious about? Isn't he also your disciple? Wasn't your spacial magic passed down to him? He can be counted as your old self's disciple as well."

I hastily followed up, "That's right! Teacher Zhen, if it weren't for your tutelage, I wouldn't be who I am today. You also will forever be my teacher."

Teacher Zhen laughed in satisfaction. "Zhang Gong, why are you wearing a mask? Quickly take it off. It can't be that it's feared that you're ugly?"

I smiled wryly. "That's correct. It's due to me being too ugly that I'm wearing a mask." It seemed that they were didn't know about my disfiguration. I then summarized my experiences at the Demon race. It wasn't only the two teachers, only a minority of the high-ranking military officers of the three kingdoms knew about this news so they were all deeply captivated in my story.

Teacher Zhen said, "Even if you're ugly, you're still our disciple. How can we care about your appearance? Take down the mask so that I can see the damage that the Demon Emperor had inflicted on you."

I sighed lightly. Under Teacher Di's pity filled gaze, I reached my hand to my face to remove the mask, instantly making astonished yelps heard throughout the top of the fort.

.....

Dong Ri brought me to fly into the fort. After seeing the father-like

Teacher Di, my mood was much better. I donned the Ice God's mask after bidding my farewells to Teacher Di and Teacher Zhen before letting Dong Ri lead the way to see the injured brothers. In order to prevent the Monster race from assaulting the city, I had left Xiao Jin and Xiao Rou at the top of the fort.

I must hastily check everyone's condition. According to Dong Ri, everyone seemed to have suffered different severities of injuries. In that case, they wouldn't be able to withstand the divine wills that Mi Jia Lie had given me. If I couldn't increase everyone's power, how could we deal with the soon to be resurrected Monster King?

"Dong Ri, I had heard from Xiao Jin that the Dragon race should have already arrived at the fort. Since they are here, with their assistance why are our losses still so large?"

Dong Ri shook his head. "The Dragon race never appeared, not to mention help. If Xiao Jin's father were here, we wouldn't need to fear the three Great monsters. Those three fellows were really powerful. Even the combined attack with our divine weapons were useless against them. In order to save us, the Third and Fourth Elders had to sacrifice their lives." When mentioning the two deceased elders, Dong Ri's expression darkened.

I sighed. "The elders really helped us a lot. They had even sacrificed their lives for the world. They are worthy of respect! But the Dragon race should have been here. Xiao Jin said that they had left to meet up at the fort after your departure. Could it be that something happened along the way?" The Dragon race's strength was really too crucial to us. Even though I had received the Radiant God's inheritance, I wasn't totally confident in dealing with the Dragon King. But why hadn't they appeared?

"Who knows why they didn't arrive on time? Big Brother Zhang Gong, are you really confident in dealing with the Monster King now?"

I smiled wryly. "If I was confident, I wouldn't be so anxious right now. You just saw that even though my powers have increased drastically, it is

still slightly lower than being able to deal with the Three Great Monsters. The power of the Monster King is really unfathomable. Who knows how abnormal he is that even God King couldn't deal with him? How can I be at ease?"

"This is it, Big Brother Zhang Gong." Dong Ri stopped in front of a humble courtyard. "Let's quickly enter! If everyone knows about your return, they will definitely be exceptionally excited."

When thinking that I would meet up with the group soon, my heart was set ablaze. 'Mu Zi, Hai Shui, are you two alright? Hai Shui, I'll finally be able to face you and accept your deep feelings for me.'

## Chapter 10: Family and Friends

The courtyard door wasn't locked, so Dong Ri and I pushed it to enter. The courtyard was extremely large; it looked like a practice area for martial arts, sparse without any adornment. The surroundings were peaceful and there was a faint medicinal scent. 'Hmm? Why was there a medicine scent? Even if everyone was injured, wouldn't treatment with magic be better? The fort shouldn't lack healing mages!'

Seeing my heart's doubts, Dong Ri explained. "It was medicine from the elders. They said that even though treatment with magic is faster, magic has side effects, so medicine is better. Big Brother Zhan Hi and the rest of the brothers are staying in the eastern side of the courtyard, while Mu Zi and Hai Shui are living at the western side. Which place shall we head to first?"

I looked at him and said, "We'll head to see Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest of the brothers first." Even though I was eager to see Mu Zi and Hai Shui, in the current situation, I should head to see the few severely injured brothers. Under Dong Ri's lead, we arrived at the eastern side of the courtyard.

Dong Ri pushed open the door and entered before saying happily, "I'm back!"

Xiu Si's feeble voice was heard. "Seeing your happy expression, could it be that the Monster race retreated? Have the Dragon race come? Without them, it would be hard for us humans to win!"

Dong Ri laughed. "No, it isn't the Dragon race. It's a help greater than the Dragon race. Haha!"

There was silence in the room. Zhan Hu said in a slightly shaky voice, "Can it be....can it be....."

Like a flash, I dashed into the room and said with excitement. "Big brother! It's me! I'm back!" The room was chaotic, with little furniture, mostly beds that were randomly placed. Zhan Hu, Xiu Si, Gao De, Xin Ao and the three remaining elders were lying on their beds. With pale

complexions, all seven sets of eyes had a peculiar expression the second I appeared. They looked at me, all stunned, not saying a single word.

After a while, Zhan Hu muttered, "Zhang Gong, it's really you. Zhang Gong, you brat, you've finally returned."

Choked with my emotions, I replied, "Big brother, it's my fault for returning late. Elders, I've let you down." Upon saying that, I fell to my knees before the elders.

The three elder's injuries seemed minor. The First Elder stood and came before me. He pulled me up with tears in his eyes. "It's enough that you've returned. That's enough."

"But First Elder, the Third and Fourth Elders, they....."

The First Elder sighed. "So you know. Even though Old Three and Four have died, they died with honor. Our task is to defend the continent, they died in the line of duty. Zhang Gong, you don't need to get upset for us. At our age, death means nothing. The most fortunate way is for us to die in battle."

First Elder was much more calm and collected than I thought. I was a little shocked and said, "Elder, but I....."

The First Elder had forbidden me in continuing what I wanted to say. "Stop, enough of this. Since you're back, the heavy task of eliminating the Monster race is now passed on to you. Telling by the divine aura coming from your body, we can tell that you've already accepted the God's inheritance. Zhang Gong, you haven't let us down. That's worth everything we've done."

I replied choked with sobs, "First Elder, thank you for holding out for so long, gaining so much time for the world. Don't worry, as long as I have a single breath remaining, I definitely won't let the Monster race win."

The First Elder laughed. "Hearing those words, I can truly relax. Even if the final outcome is failure, we will have done all we could do and we won't have any regrets."

Zhan Hu asked, "Zhang Gong, were you the one that made the Monster

race retreat?"

Before I could reply, Dong Ru intercepted, "That was that case! Big Brother Zhan Hu, you don't understand how great Big Brother Zhang Gong is. He single handedly forced the retreat of the Three Great Monsters and even cast a Holy Light Slash into the gulf, killing or weakening innumerable monsters. Our brothers then lead the armed forces of the Three Kingdoms to take that opportunity and massacre the monsters, killing every last one."

I glared at Dong Ri. "How could it be as easy as you made it sound? Brothers, you should recuperate as quickly as possible. The invasion of the Monster race has reached its final phase. I believe that not long from now, the Monster King will appear. We must be able to use our combined powers to defeat him when the time comes."

Xiu Si replied, "I get what you mean. The only way is to use the ultimate forbidden spell. Don't worry. Our injuries are almost completely healed. In a few days, we'll be fully recovered. Ah, Zhang Gong, since you returned, have you gone to see Mu Zi and that Hai Shui from the Kingdom of Aixia? Their feelings for you are much stronger than ours. Quickly go and meet up with them." Seeing that everyone accepted Mu Zi, she must have taken over many of my responsibilities during the period that I was gone.

My face reddened. Embarrassed, I said, "Big Brother Xiu Si, I....."

Xin Ao laughed. "What about you? Why aren't you going? The girls have given up a lot for you."

Under everyone's instigation, my desire to meet with Mu Zi and Hai Shui grew. The intense emotions made my heart beat rapidly. After leaving the eastern room, Dong Ri didn't follow me out. I took in a deep breath to calm my heart before turning around to walk to the western room.

I lightly knocked on the door of the western room. My heart raced, I didn't know how they would react after seeing me. Would they forgive me for leaving without a word?

“Who is it? Come in, the door is unlocked.”

When I pushed open the door and walked in, the western room was much smaller than the eastern room. There were only two beds in the empty room. Mu Zi’s familiar figure was in front of me. She was tidying her bed sheets with her back facing me. On the other hand, Hai Shui, who hadn’t seen me for a few years, stared blankly at me. Even though I was wearing a mask, from the look in her eyes, I knew that she recognised me.

While Mu Zi tidied her bed sheets she said, “It’s probably Dong Ri. The Monster race must have gotten counterattacked and forced to retreat.”

I was stunned. “How did you know?”

## Chapter 11: Restoration of Appearance

Mu Zi said, "It's the cheers from the top of the fort, we can still hear them, even from this distance. Of course, I....." After she noticed the voice was different from what she had expected, Mu Zi's voice quietly trailed off and her body shuddered before she turned around to me. Mu Zi's beautiful face hadn't changed, but was a bit thinner than before. She must have suffered a lot over these two years, all because of me!

Mu Zi's body shook violently as she saw me hiding behind my mask. Tears flowed from her eyes as her pale lips constantly shivered, not saying a single word.

"Big Brother Zhang Gong!" A lovable call out was heard as Hai Shui abruptly leaped into my embrace and sobbed loudly.

Embracing Hai Shui's moving body, my heart became completely infatuated. 'Mu Zi, Hai Shui, I finally got to meet with you two.' The eager thoughts numbed my body, as I embraced the crying Hai Shui. The Hai Shui who was the same as Mu Zi, speechless.

After a while, Mu Zi wiped the tears from her eyes as she asked calmly, "You still remember to return?"

"Mu Zi, I....It's my fault. I'm sorry I've made you suffer."

Hearing these words, Mu Zi's freshly dried eyes flowed again with tears. She turned around, facing her back to me. As her shoulders continually shook, she said, "Why would we suffer? Who could be like you? God's Envoy Zhang Gong, so carefree, able to leave whenever he wants without a single word?"

I continued to embrace Hai Shui as I moved towards Mu Zi. As I used my other hand to embrace her, Mu Zi slightly struggled, but still stayed in my embrace. I embraced them both tightly, enjoying every second of this peaceful moment.

"Mu Zi, I know it was my fault. Please forgive me. I promise never to leave the two of you from now on."

Mu Zi slowly raised her head as she asked sentimentally, "You promise?"

I resolutely nodded. "I promise. No matter what happens in the future, I won't leave you two. Mu Zi, I've got a good news to share with you two."

Mu Zi was slightly stunned as she asked, "What good news?" Hai Shui stopped crying and raised her head to look at me.

Under their gazes, I slowly removed the Ice God's Mask from my face. "My...my appearance has recovered." What displayed before them was my originally handsome, unscarred face. My appearance recovered while I was hopeless. At the top of the fort, I was forced to remove the mask. When Teacher Di and Teacher Zhen simultaneously saw that I was no longer disfigured, they asked me why I didn't have any scars. I was stunned. What could make me happier than recovering my looks? Appearance was extremely important to me! I, who regained my handsome appearance, no longer needed to have any consideration for feeling inferior and could simply accept Mu Zi's and Hai Shui's feelings. The recovery of my looks must have been Mi Jia Lie's doings. He really treated me well. He had easily eliminated the only regret in my life.

Since Hai Shui hadn't seen my disfigured appearance, she didn't know how to react to it, but when Mu Zi saw my handsome appearance, her entire body shuddered. As she extended her delicate small hand to caress my face, she dazedly asked, "Zhang Gong, your scars....."

I nodded excitedly. "Yeah, my scars are gone. Mu Zi, Hai Shui, now we really can be together."

Mu Zi's expression changed as she pushed me away, pulling Hai Shui along with her. "Zhang Gong, what do you really think of us? You think that we simply fell in love with your looks?"

'Ah? I said the wrong words. Damn it!' I tried explaining with stutters, "No, that's not it! Mu Zi, I didn't mean it that way. Please don't be angry."

Seeing my anxious expression, Mu Zi laughed. "Look at your silly expression! When did you return?"

Seeing that he didn't really blamed me, I heaved a sigh of relief. "I've arrived not long ago. Mu Zi, please don't get mad at me. The reason I departed without telling you was because I didn't have confidence in being able to successfully accept the inheritance. I didn't know if I would ever return, so I left without telling you. With your personality, you would have definitely wanted to accompany me. How could I put you in danger? But now it's fine, I've already inherited the Radiant God's powers and can completely control the Holy Sword's power. Once we defeat the Monster King, we can be together forever."

Mu Zi snorted. "I'll forgive you this time. But you better remember what you just said. Furthermore, sister Hai Shui had given up a lot for you. You mustn't betray her either."

When I looked at Hai Shui, her lovable face blushed with shyness. I nodded. "I will. I will definitely repay what you both have done for me, from this day on. The most important thing for now though is annihilating the Monster race in order to return the peace and harmony in the world. We'll really be together after that!"

Mu Zi nodded. "The Monster race is really powerful. When the Three Great Monsters attacked the fort, if it weren't for your brothers and the five elders, the fort would have already fallen. Since you already gained the Radiant God's power, after everyone's injuries recover, we should go on the offensive. Why hasn't the Monster King appeared? If the Monster King and the Three Great Monsters were to attack the fort before you returned, we wouldn't have been able to resist them. Can it be that he hasn't resurrected yet?"

I frowned and replied, "I'm not sure, but when I reached the fort, I felt a strong demonic power nearby, and it couldn't have been the Three Great Monsters. I think that the Monster King must have resurrected. There must be a reason why the Monster King didn't join the monsters in attacking us. We need to be cautious." I chuckled and I said, "Mu Zi, Hai Shui, I've got something that I want to discuss with you two."

Mu Zi and Hai Shui simultaneously were stunned. "What matter?"

Looking at their impeccable appearance, my heart heated up. I moved forth to make them return into my embrace. “I wish to use your room and temporarily stay here.”

Hai Shui shyly lowered her head and Mu Zi punched me. “How can we let that happen? Where did you get such a weird thought at such a time?”

## Chapter 12: Cultivation Recovery

“What weird thoughts will I have?” I said, feeling wronged. “It’s just that I don’t have a place to stay, so I thought of using your place to cultivate and recover my injuries. Big Brother and the others have too many people over there, it’s already a mess.”

Mu Zi and Hai Shui simultaneously exclaimed, “What?! You’re hurt?”

Seeing their worried gazes, my heart warmed. “Relax, it’s just a small injury. When I fought against the Three Great Monsters, my meridians were hurt by their shockwave of demonic powers.”

Mu Zi asked in astonishment, “You still can’t eliminate them even after the inheritance?”

I smiled wryly. “How can the Three Great Monsters be so easy to be deal with? They are our enemy’s strongest, excluding the Monster King. During the great war between the Gods and the Monster race, each of the three individually held powers that were on par with the Radiant God’s battle angel, Mi Jie Lie. After returning to this world, they only recovered 30 percent of their powers. Otherwise, it would be alright to deal with one of them. But if there were two of them, we would be forced to retreat. Even if it’s the current me, it would be difficult to even defeat them while dealing with all three of them simultaneously.”

Mu Zi frowned. “What are we going to do now? They possess such powers. If the Monster King is added to the mix, won’t we lose without a doubt?”

I smiled. “I definitely have a way. After the inheritance, Mi Jia lie gave me orbs that contain the divine will for each of the brother’s divine instruments. Once the brothers have fully recovered, I’ll let them each accept their corresponding divine will. Their power will greatly increase. Only after we can simultaneously cast forbidden spells, we won’t need to worry about the Monster King and the Three Great Monsters.”

Hearing my words, a light flashed in Hai Shui’s eyes. She must be excited from being able to fight against the Monster race so I didn’t pay

much attention.

Mu Zi replied, “Quickly recover your injuries, we’ll guard you.”

“Ah! That’s right! Mu Zi, I heard that you are also hurt. Are you feeling better?” I shot divine power into Mu Zi’s body to check on her meridians. Mu Zi’s meridians didn’t seem to be hurt. My heart calmed down then.

“My injuries had already recovered. Ah! Your power is so warm! Is this your divine power?”

I nodded and smiled. “I’m starting my treatment. There’s no need to protect me, but I wish to see you when I wake up. My injuries aren’t serious. It shouldn’t take long to recover. Mu Zi, Hai Shui, I love you.” Upon saying that, I placed a gentle kiss on their heads. Mu Zi’s body shuddered, while Hai Shui was so stirred up that her body violently shuddered for a moment before calming down. Their eyes expressed an intense love.

After letting go, I put on the Ice God’s mask again before heading to sit on Mu Zi’s bed. “Alright, I’m starting. After my injuries recover, I’ll help to heal the brothers’ injuries. Right, Mu Zi, Xiao Jin came with me. He’s currently with Xiao Rou at the top of the city. In a while you should go and ask why the Dragon race aren’t here yet? Similarly, you should pay close attention to the actions of the Monster race.”

Mu Zi nodded. “Just take your time to recover. Leave the rest to me. Also haven’t you recovered your good looks? Why are you still wearing that mask? You no longer need to cover your face.” I could see that Mu Zi was extremely happy that I had recovered my looks. Who didn’t wish for their lover to be handsome after all?

With a deep look, I gazed at Mu Zi and Hai Shui. “The mask that I’m wearing is the Ice God’s mask, another divine instrument. I’ve obtained it by chance. Its ability stabilizes my mind, which is most suitable for training. I’m starting.” Upon saying that, I didn’t dally and closed my eyes, circulating the divine power in my body. After checking on everyone, my heart settled. When I observed the golden sea in my body, I was shocked to see that the injuries had only slightly deviated the flow of divine power

in my body. The power in my body was already recovering automatically. The golden river had gradually returned to its original position. The divine power in my body was constantly being willed to circulate, in order to quickly recover the initial route. The light elements in my surroundings were constantly absorbed into my body, converting into divine power. A faint gold light emitted from my body, filling Mu Zi and Hai Shui's room with divine power. The immense pressure was making it difficult for Mu Zi and Hai Shui to breathe.

"Elder sister Mu Zi, let's head out as the power from Big Brother Zhang Gong is too powerful. Soon I won't be able to stand it." Hai Shui said to Mu Zi, as her face strained with difficulty.

Mu Zi was slightly better off compared to Hai Shui. "It seems that you don't have a place to sleep tonight. Zhang Gong is so irresponsible, not telling us how powerful he currently is before entering his meditative state. But the divine power emitted from his body is really warm! Sister Hai Shui, why are you so pale? Is the pressure too strong for you? Let's head out first." After speaking, she went to the eastern room to find Dong Ri, to have him to protect Zhang Gong. She then brought Hai Shui with her to talk to Xiao Jin. After leaving the western room, Hai Shui's complexion became more natural and recovered her rosy complexion. There was complex expression in her eyes as though her heart was debating something. All of these thoughts occurred while Mu Zi, who was filled with excitement from Zhang Gong's return, didn't notice.

While circulating the divine power in my body, I found that when I resisted the Three Great Monsters, I wasn't at full power and had used about 70% of my power. It was due to me rushing back to the God Protector Domain after inheriting the power so I wasn't really familiar with using them and hadn't fully incorporated them as my power. When dealing with the Three Great Monsters, I wasn't able to use the full potential of my power to attack them. My confidence increased after discovering this. If I continued to work hard cultivating, I should be able to recover all of my power quickly.

## Chapter 13: The Profound Divine Powers

I coaxed my divine power to continually circulate. While it was circulating, I investigated its usages. As I meditated, the seal Mi Jia Lie left on my mind was lifted. His memories flowed through me, allowing me to comprehend the usage for the newfound divine powers and techniques in my body. If I could fuse these powers and techniques with the Holy Sword's might, I would reach the peak realm. Looking at his memories, I understood why the Holy Sword's power was so immense. The Dark Monster Blade wielded by the Dark Monster Jia Si Ke Li Duo couldn't be compared to the tyrannical might of its divine power. The Radiant Holy Sword was once the weapon of the God King, it was the greatest divine instrument in the God's Realm.

Following the immense surge of divine power, I unknowingly floated mid air and the power coalesced in the center of the room. Fortunately, under my suppression, the wild power stayed within a three meter radius of me, else the room would have been blown apart. After an entire day, I finally comprehended the information contained in Mi Jia Lie's memories and gradually gained mastery over the divine power in my body. I didn't know that Mu Zi and Hai Shui had returned. To be honest, they couldn't even enter the room, the immense divine power was protecting my body, making its golden radiance fill the entire room.

"Elder sister Mu Zi, we can't enter. What shall we do?" Hai Shui asked anxiously.

Mu Zi raised her head to look at the darkened sky. "It seems that he won't wake up. Let's not disturb him and spend the night in the lounge. What he said was right. This room didn't need protection, Zhang Gong's power was more than sufficient. It seems that we really do need to cultivate from now on. If not, the gap will become too large."

Hai Shui chuckled lightly. "Elder sister, why worry? We won't need to cultivate anymore now that he's so strong. Won't it be easier for him to protect us?"

Mu Zi's face reddened. "You must be happy to see him return and

promise not to leave us behind. You should be at ease now. When you were depressed in the past, I was really worried! Now that we have hope for successfully defeating the Monster race, we can enjoy life. I don't know how matters are for the Demon race and whether or not father can hold back the Monster race's attacks. When we looked at the gulf before, it had already quieted. I believe that the monsters that invaded the Demon and Beast races will be eliminated sooner or later."

Hai Shui lowered her head. "Elder sister, I've made you worry about me. The Demon race should be alright. It's also useless to worry now. Let's go and find some blankets, it's getting cold."

.....

My consciousness was compl immersed in my cultivation so I didn't know how much time had passed. I finally understood the methods for using the divine powers. With a loud yell, my consciousness returned, my senses gradually came back into focus. I gradually withdrew the divine powers that were being emitted from my body, reverting my golden eyes back to their original appearance. 'Hmm?' After withdrawing my powers, the room was so bright! I clearly remembered it to have only a single window though. When I raised my head head in curiousity, I was shocked. I didn't know when it happened but the entire roof had simply disappeared, allowing the bright sunlight to enter the room. I no longer a wondered why the room was very bright. It was definitely because of my immense divine power. It wasn't too bad though, at least the walls didn't collapse.

"Zhang Gong, so you've finally woken up." Mu Zi's unhappy voice sounded from outside. When the door opened, Mu Zi and Hai Shui came in.

Seeing them, my heart warmed. "How did you know I'd woken up? Your gauging of time is really accurate!"

Hai Shui laughed. "How can we not know? After the roof got blasted away, the divine light soared into the sky, making everyone in the fort come looking for you. We had to spend lots of effort to maintain the

peace while you trained! When that divine light suddenly disappeared elder sis Mu Zi and I knew that you were done cultivating. You're really capable of meditating for 5 days."

I was alarmed. "What? It's been 5 days? Time flies."

Mu Zi said, "Quickly get up, lazy bum. How are your injuries?" Upon asking that, Mu Zi's face expressed care and concern.

I quickly moved between them, embracing their soft and delicate bodies, one in each arm. "Alright, don't worry about me. That's right, are there any movements from the Monster race and have any monsters appeared from the gulf?"

Mu Zi frowned. "I'm also very surprised, after you started meditating, there wasn't the slightest movement from the Monster race. The gulf remains peaceful as though nothing ever happened."

I was stunned. "It seems as though they're gathering power while they await the revival of the Monster King. It'll probably be the last battle with the Monster race the next time they appear. How are Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest?"

Mu Zi replied, "Their injuries have recovered, but they are still feeling weak."

I nodded. "Alright, I'll go and see them. I must quickly give them the divine wills as soon as possible so that they will have sufficient powers to help me eliminate the Monster King by using the ultimate forbidden spell."

When Mu Zi, Hai Shui and I walked out of the room, Zhan Hu and the rest were working out in the courtyard. Seeing their energy, vigor, and agility, they didn't seem to be injured.

Zhan Hu laughed. "Zhang Gong, you've woken up. You brat, it is fine to cultivate in closed doors, but you didn't need to kick out the two ladies."

I was stunned and looked towards Mu Zi and Hai Shui. Mu Zi rolled her eyes at me. "Let's stop talking, didn't you need to give them the divine wills?"

Before walking over to the brothers, I released Mu Zi and Hai Shui from my embrace. “My injuries have completely recovered. How about you guys?”

Zhan Hu brandished his fist. “We’re fine already. After receiving the divine instruments, our recovery power has become much greater ”

## Chapter 14: Divine Will's Inheritance

I nodded. "That's great then. Mi Jia Lie gave me the divine wills for each of your divine instruments before I left the God Rended Canyon. You need them so that you can use the full potential of your divine instruments. Since that's the case, we can also bring out the full potential of the Ultimate Forbidden Spell. We won't need to fear the Monster King any longer. Mi Jia Lie had instructed me that when receiving the divine wills, you must be at your peak condition. Otherwise, it'll be risky so I'll seriously ask you again. Have you guys really recovered completely?"

Zhan Hu looked at the rest before replying, "I've recovered, Xiu Si shouldn't have any problems as well. We suffered the lightest injuries among us all, we recovered in two days. Afterwards, Xiu Si used his Sky God's Horn to heal everyone so their injuries should already be fine. What is a divine will anyways? Is it really that powerful?"

I nodded. "It's hard for me to explain in detail what the divine wills are exactly, but essentially it activates the genuine powers of the divine instrument by fusing your current power with the divine instrument. You'll understand it once you inherit the divine will. From my estimation, you'll reach at least the War God's rank after the inheritance."

Zhan Hu, Xiu Si, Gao De, Xin Ao and Dong Ri simultaneously cried out, "What?! War God?!" Excitement could be seen in their eyes.

As a cultivator, no matter who they were, they would always set the rank of War God as their final goal. It was a rank similar to that of the Grand Magister's power! It was the peak cultivation for martial artists. If they all successfully gained the divine will, their combined powers wouldn't be inferior to mine. We would then have a much larger chance for defeating the Monster King.

I nodded. "The Monster King can be appearing any moment now. Since everyone has recovered, let's not dally and commence the inheritance now. Everyone, form a circle and summon your divine instruments."

Zhan Hu, Xiu Si, Gao De, Xin Ao, and Dong Ri gathered with me at the

center. Mu Zi and Hai Shui retreated to a side.

Zhan Hu chanted, “The God King bestowed upon me the War God’s Armor. No evil shall pass me, for I shall obstruct the evil demons.” A blue armour appeared in mid air and shattered into countless pieces as they covered Big Brother Zhan Hu’s body, piece by piece. A blue energy was constantly rippling, while his body emitted a divine aura filled with the desire to fight.

Xiu Si chanted, “The God King bestowed upon me the Sky God’s Horn. My horn’s roar will pierce through the nine heavens.” A white light flashed and the Sky God’s horn appeared in Xiu Si’s hand. The pure white horn hummed, forming a benevolent divine aura around him.

Xin Ao chanted, “The God King bestowed upon me the Titan God’s Hammer. I will shake the heavens and move the earth to protect the righteous path.” An enormous Titan God’s hammer, flickering with yellow light, appeared in mid air. Xin Ao extended both of his hand to grasp onto the handle. The yellow light instantly covered his body, making his body emit a domineering divine aura.

Gao De said, “The God King bestowed upon me the Lightning God’s Shield. Even ten thousand blades shall not stop me.” A small red shield appeared in Gao De’s right hand. The red light encapsulated him, making an intense divine aura to envelope his body. The flickering red light gave people a stalwart sense of steadiness.

Dong Ri said, “The God King bestowed upon me the Wind God’s Bow. My ethereal arrows will flash rapidly and violently.” After a gold light flashed, a small golden short bow appeared in Dong Ri’s hand, emitting green lights. As the green light rays covered Dong Ri’s entire body, the auras emitting from the brothers fused together to form a five coloured halo, with me at its center.

After receiving Mi Jia Lie’s memory, I clearly knew that while inheriting the divine will, I must protect their bodies. Even the slightest disturbance could lead to their death.

I chanted loudly, “The God King bestowed upon me the Radiant Holy

Sword. It shall shine with the soaring radiance of the vault of the heavens!" A silver Holy Sword momentarily appeared before me. The intense golden light completely enclosed the five of them. I extended my hand to grip onto the Holy Sword, forcefully emitting divine power. My spirit shook and summoned the six wings of light on my back, instantly absorbing the light elements in the air.

"Brothers, you must focus on your divine instruments in order to fuse the divine will into your body. No matter how much pain you feel, you must endure." I could still clearly remember the pain that I felt from when I received the God's inheritance. I couldn't predict what would happen to them while they received their divine wills so I warned them beforehand.

"Just do it, we can withstand it." Zhan Hu firmly replied. The others looked at me in agreement, with a steadfast look on their readied faces.

I took in a deep breathe and waved my hand, making the blue, white, yellow, red, and green power orbs to appear before me. The five lights rose to the sky, simultaneously causing Zhan Hu and the others' bodies to shake. The divine instruments started to slightly vibrate, almost as if they were alive, dancing around in a jubilant manner. The five of them showed grave expressions as they forcefully withstood the undulations of power from their divine instruments.

I raised the Holy Sword and enveloped the five of them in a golden light. The courtyard filled with divine aura. I raised my left hand and abruptly released the seal on the five-colored light balls, making them charge toward the divine instruments like shooting stars. From what I learned with Mi Jia Lie's memory, after the five lights fuse into their bodies, they would need a short while before being able to fully command their divine instruments. This instant seemed to be passing by slowly as I looked up nervously at the five lights.

Just as the five lights flew into their heads and was about to fuse with their bodies, an abnormally occurred. A fuzzy grey light suddenly floated over, seemingly unhindered by the Holy Sword's boundary, and struck heavily onto Zhan Hu and the others' bodies.

## Chapter 15: A Sudden Strange Phenomena

The five of them cried out mournfully as they violently spurt out blood. Their bodies soared and landed heavily to the side and the Holy Sword's boundary shattered. My chest felt as though I had been struck by an enormous hammer from the backlash, forcing me retreat a few steps. I was worried, the five divine wills seemed to be ignorant of what was happening and continued to quickly charge towards the divine instruments. There was a high probability that the brothers wouldn't be able to currently withstand the enormous divine powers, leading to the destruction of their bodies.

At this critical moment, the Ice God's mask let out faint white light. My mind seemed to have been electrified, forcefully clearing my mind. I hastily brandished the Holy Sword with my hand and formed an arc to block the five light balls from entering their divine weapons. With a wave of my left hand, it rapidly sealed the five divine wills and returned them to my space pocket once again.

My heart sank. Who could easily break through the Holy Sword's boundary and simultaneously hurt the five of them? ... Of course, the one and only ruler of the Monster race, the one who would bring carnage to the world, the Monster King. I never expected that he could so accurately deduce the most crucial time to strike.

"Hai Shui, why did you do that?" Mu Zi cried out. But when I looked at her, the beautiful and gentle Hai Shui had changed. Her hair was no longer a bright blue, but had turned greyish blue. Her eyes was constantly glimmered with red light. Her icy gaze held no feelings toward me. 'Could it be that the previous grey light was from her?'

Hai Shui snorted and with a casual wave of her hand, Mu Zi, who was nearing the Magister realm, was sent flying to heavily strike against a wall.

Apart from Hai Shui, I was the only one left standing. I held the Holy Sword in front of my body and asked fumingly, "Hai Shui, do you even know what you are doing?"

Hai Shui broke into laughter. Her voice was no longer melodious and moving. Her tone was neither sinister nor normal, “Human, you’re really idiotic. There’s only one outcome for going against my Monster race, death. Brat, do you really think you can fight against me using Mi Jia Lie’s power? To me, Mi Jia Lie was nothing more than another fragile life. He was surmount to nothing. Not bad! Not bad! I can eliminate the hope of that old fellow, the God King, today. Afterwards, I shall see what he can still use to resist me. When this world falls into my hand, it will be the demise of the God’s Realm. Hahahahaha!”

I looked dazedly at Hai Shui, who looked crazed, and said with a deep hatred, “You’re the Monster King.”

Hai Shui’s laughter stopped abruptly. “That’s right! I’m the ruler that governs everything, the great Monster King. No matter what, you’ll fall to my Monster race’s feet. You understood too late.”

Why? Why did Hai Shui become the Monster King? I couldn’t wrap my head around it. Seeing Zhan Hu and the rest still unconscious, I felt my heart as it ripped to pieces. I hollered as I brandished the Radiant Holy Sword, shooting a silver streak towards the Monster King.

Hai Shui chuckled disdainfully. “I’ve already told you that Mi Jia Lie’s ability isn’t worthy of my attention. You still want to fight me? You’re really too naive.” She raised her right hand to physically block the Holy Sword’s divine light ray. The enormous backlash flung my body high in the air before colliding against the courtyard wall. He held such tyrannical, strong power!

The Monster King looked at his arm. “This body is not bad. It’s perfect. With this vessel, I can bring out a sufficient amount of power to annihilate every life form in the world.”

I used the Holy Sword to support my body as I slowly stood. “Why? How could you possess Hai Shui’s body?”

The Monster King looked coldly at me. “Since you’re about to die, it won’t matter if I tell you that. To you humans, everyone has desires, which is what I like the most. That little girl Hai Shui’s desire was

extremely intense, so strong that I couldn't help myself in making her my new vessel. Do you know what her desire was? It's to receive your love. Haha! How laughable? Too hilarious. Love is nothing, and yet she was willing to sacrifice her life for it."

My heart trembled. Even though I knew Hai Shui had deep feelings for me, I didn't expect it to be so great. 'Hai Shui, it's all my fault. If I had accepted you in the first place, you wouldn't have been possessed by the Monster King.' Fury filled my chest. I no longer cared about anything. I just wanted to raise the Holy Sword. Suddenly, I saw happiness in the Monster King's eyes. Happiness? What was he excited about? He held an absolute advantage now, he shouldn't need to be happy about it. The Ice God's mask sent an electric shock through my mind, once again clearing it. I instantly understood, no matter how powerful he was, he still must have a weak point. An invader like himself shouldn't need to talk to me so much, he could just kill me directly. His previous words were to provoke me. What was his purpose? Could it be that he didn't have enough power to deal with me? It couldn't be, his power was over three times more than mine, so naturally I wasn't his match. What was it then?

While I couldn't make a decision, I saw a look of conflict in the Monster King's eyes! 'I get it! He must not be able to completely possess Hai Shui's body. Hai Shui loves me so she wouldn't have any killing intent towards me. The Monster King wants to use my hatred of him to make Hai Shui think I hate her, and thus using that to kill me. That's it! That must be the case.'

Thinking about that, under the astonishment of the Monster King, I lowered the Radiant Holy Sword as I said gently towards the Monster King, "Hai Shui, awaken, chase that devil from your body. I love you. I really do! You want to experience a peaceful life with me, right?"

# Chapter 16: The Dragon King Appears

The expression in the Monster King's eyes instantly became very disorderly. 'Ah!' He screamed as he placed his hands at both sides of his head. Hai Shui's well developed body shook violently. I was excited as it seemed that I had guessed right.

"Hai Shui, do you still remember the time when we studied together at the academy, you learned water magic and I learned light magic? When I lost my position in the Kingdom, you risked your life to save me. I was really grateful for what you did. You're such an exceptional girl! It's my fault for not treasuring you in the past. Please give me a chance. I'll make it up to you."

The Monster King shouted, "Stop talking!" His body morphed into an ashy haze, abruptly charging towards me.

My mind was completely lost in thought so I was unable to defend myself from this attack. Even if I could, I wasn't a match for the Monster King. At this moment, three bluish-gold lights suddenly charged over to meet with the Monster King's attack. My mind cleared and I shouted, "No!" It was the three elders who had reached the Sword Saint rank that charged towards the Monster King. They had charged towards the Monster King with all their might to save me.

"NO!"

After a loud sound, the three elders vanished, leaving nothing but a bloody mist. A Sword Saint's power was already the peak martial artist's cultivation in the continent, but up against the Monster King it was useless. With a slight delay in his steps, the grey light still glimmered as the Monster King continued to charge towards me.

I quickly guarded with the Holy Sword. Just as I wanted to resist, the Monster King suddenly stopped three meters away. Using Hai Shui's body, the Monster King clutched her head and bitterly struggled. Hai Shui's love saved me at the very last second. A huge dragon roar was heard suddenly. It was definitely not something an ordinary dragon could give off. The

sound filled the air and shook heaven and earth.

The Monster King glared at me with an intense hatred, kicked off the ground, and began to morph into gray fog once again. “Brat, just you wait! After I have full control over this vessel, in two days time, it’ll be your humanity’s demise.” The grey fog suddenly moved and disappeared in the blink of an eye.

My entire body slumped to the floor. Even though my injuries weren’t severe during the conflict, the pressure I felt in my heart was unbearable. In just a few minutes’ time, Big Brother Zhan Hu and the brothers were knocked unconscious, Mu Zi was also severely injured. Even worse, the remaining three elders sacrificed their lives to save me, and Hai Shui, who was deeply in love with me, had been possessed by the Monster King. Every single event that happened would be unbearable for anyone. Yet all of them happened to me simultaneously. Mu Zi! How was Mu Zi? I moved to Mu Zi’s side and embraced her before activating my divine power to check her body’s condition. The Monster King didn’t seem to mind her, even though he sent her flying. She was severely hurt, but it wasn’t life threatening. As my divine power forced the last of the Monster King’s aura out, Mu Zi’s eyebrows relaxed and she fell unconscious.

Just as I wanted to check on big brother Zhan Hu and the rests’ conditions, the sky suddenly darkened. The dazzling sunlight was completely blacked out. I was afraid. Had the Monster King returned? I raised my head to look upwards. ‘Ah!’ It wasn’t the Monster King, instead there were a few hundred dragons hovering in the air, covering the sunlight. Both a large and a small gold dragon flew over to the courtyard. The smaller golden dragon was Xiao Jin, while next to him the enormous golden dragon with dazzling golden rays emanating would be Xiao Jin’s father, the Dragon King.

Their flying speed was extremely fast, as in a quick second the blink of an eye they had already landed in the courtyard.

“Master, what happened?” Xiao Jin asked anxiously after seeing the unconscious crowd.

My heart hurt as I smiled wryly. “It’s the Monster King. It’s finally appeared.”

“Zhang Gong, that grey fog that just left should be the Monster King, right?” The Dragon King deeply asked with his resounding voice.

I solemnly nodded and quickly informed him of what had previously happened.

The eyebrows of the Dragon King knitted and a flash of golden light, he used his dragon powers to enclose big brother Zhan Hu and the rest within it. I knew the powers of the Dragon King. In terms of recovery, he were much stronger compared to mine.

Looking at the Dragon King’s tightly knitted eyebrows, I asked anxiously, “How are they? Can they still be saved?”

The Dragon King sighed. “According to what you said previously, the Monster King had broken through the Holy Sword’s boundary. That in turn saved their lives. The boundary helped them to block the majority of the attack. And with their divine instruments, the Monster King wasn’t able to kill them off in one go.”

Hearing that big brother Zhan Hu and the rest weren’t in any mortal danger, my heart momentarily calmed down. “Uncle Dragon King, when will Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest recover by?” The Monster King was going to attack again in two day’s time. At that time he would have the assistance of the Three Great Monsters. I really wouldn’t be of any help if I couldn’t rely on big brother Zhan hu and the others’ reinforcements. The Dragon King shook his enormous dragon head. “Their injuries are really severe so I could only stabilize their body conditions. It will at least take a few months for them to fully recover.”

I cried out, “What? A few months’ time?! This....This.....” My heart became disconcerted as I looked around at my brothers as they hovered in midair under the Dragon King’s power. I could wait for a few months’ time, but the Monster King wouldn’t! He would control Hai Shui’s body and immediately invade the fort. With solely my powers, how could I resist the Monster King by myself? To the Monster King and the Three

Great Monsters, ordinary soldiers wouldn't hinder them in the slightest. Even if I added the Dragon King and the Dragon race into the mix, it would still be unable to deal with their devastating powers!

The Dragon King muttered an incantation in the Dragon race's language, resulting in the intensification of the light boundary surrounding the five of them. I knew that the Dragon King was trying to heal them with all his might. Currently, I could only wait.

Even though I had only made a few exchanges in battle with the Monster King, my divine power was actually halved. His power was much more than disastrous than what I had originally thought it would be. Even the power I possessed after inheriting all of the Radiant light God's inheritance was useless against him. The Monster King's power was extremely frightening. My heart sank as I sat crossed-leg on the floor, focusing on recovering my divine powers.

## Chapter 17: The Great Battle Was Imminent

I was woke up to a warm power after an unknown amount of time. I opened my eyes to see Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest seated cross-legged. There was slight rosiness on their faces, but they still looked feeble like before. The Dragon King and Xiao Jin were seated to the side, looking at me. Even after my recovery, the light elements had already recovered most of my divine powers. However, it would still take some time for me to reach my peak condition.

I got up and retracted the six light wings on my back. "Uncle Dragon King, thank you for saving big brother Zhan Hu and the rest. How are their injuries?"

The Dragon King shook his head. "I've done my best, but they were severely hurt by the Monster King. Even though I eradicated the remnant powers from Monster King in their bodies, it'll still take at least a month's time for them to fully recover. It seems that time is pressing. We'll need to adopt an alternative idea to deal with the situation at hand."

My slight hope was completely crushed by the Dragon King's words. 'Can it be that the heavens want to eradicate the races of our continent? Didn't they say that justice always triumph over evil? Why are you pushing us into such a distress then? Monster King, I really loathe you! Not only have you stolen my beloved, but you've also severely wounded my brothers. I've not been attentive enough. I should have see the difference in Hai Shui from her usual personality.'

"Zhang Gong, don't be so dejected. You've done your best." Mu Zi's voice entered my ears, making my body to shake.

"Mu Zi, are you alright?" I asked out of concern.

Mu Zi walked over before me as she forced a smile and took the initiative to cling onto my arm. "My injuries are much better already. I didn't expect the Monster King to actually use Sister Hai Shui as his vessel. Poor Hai Shui! It's all my fault for not noticing any changes after such a long time. I believe that the Monster King had already possessed

sister Hai Shui's body for some time already."

I shook my head. "How can I blame you? Hai Shui got possessed by the Monster King because of my refusal to initially accept her feelings. I feel really guilty towards Hai Shu. If I had accepted her earlier or even gone to see her before heading to undergo the inheritance, this situation might have been avoided. It's all my fault!" I bitterly pulled on my hair as tears of grievance and hatred dampened my clothes. I had become enshrouded with limitless suffering from despair towards the future and the guilt I felt towards Hai Shui.

"Bastard!" An angry holler was heard, making my body to tremble. I vacantly raised my head and saw the Dragon King staring fumingly at me. Xiao Jin just stayed to the side, quietly, afraid to rebuke his father. The Dragon King angrily chidden, "Zhang Gong, I didn't expect you to be such weak trash. I really don't know why the mission of saving the world has fallen onto you, falling into regret once you face a single setback. How can regrets help you? The pressing mission now is to resist the Monster King. Even if it isn't successful in the end, there will still be many of us accompanying you. If the Monster King really wants to eliminate the races in the continent, he must first walk over our dead bodies to succeed. Even if we all meet our demise, we at least had fought and tried our best. It's better than being trash like you. Xiao Jin, let's go. Weak trash isn't capable of being your Master." Upon saying that, the Dragon King flapped his enormous wings and headed into the sky. Xiao Jin gave me a helpless look before following after his father.

I stood dazedly at where I stood, my mind completely blank. Mu Zi looked at me worried, but said nothing. I let out a long sigh after a long while and all the thoughts returned to my mind. 'Two days! There's still two days left. The Dragon King is right. Even if there's no means of succeeding, I still have my life. I can at least fight to the bitter end. It will be even better if I managed to take down the Monster King with me. I suddenly thought about the method for the burning life force magic that I used previously.'

"Zhang Gong, how are you faring?" Mu Zi asked gently.

I let out a long sigh. “What the Dragon King said is right. I’ve thought it through. Mu Zi, don’t worry about me. I need a favour from you.”

Mu Zi replied, “Say it, if it’s within my capability, I will do it.”

I looked affectionately at Mu Zi’s delicate face. I hugged her body for a long time before removing the Ice God’s mask as I buried my head deeply at Mu Zi’s neck, greedily taking in the feminine scent extruded from her body. Mu Zi obediently stayed there as I gradually became infatuated with her. I really wished that this moment could last forever; to hug my beloved woman for all of eternity! However, the burden on me is too heavy, my life no longer belonged to myself alone. I must serve out my duty to all of the various races in the continent.

I gently whispered in Mu Zi’s ear. “I’ll be at the city gates later, waiting for the Monster King and his subordinates to appear. I’ll have to trouble you to take care of big brother Zhan Hu and the rest. You’re also hurt so rest up as well. You’re not allowed to leave this courtyard. No matter what, unless the city falls, understand? Can you promise me that? Furthermore, regarding the aftermath of three elders, I’ll leave you in charge for it. Even though there aren’t any remains, they still sacrificed their lives for me. I want you to find a place in the fort to make a cenotaph. Mu Zi, I...I really love you. But if I don’t return, please don’t miss me.”

The shoulder of my shirt had already become damp with Mu Zi’s tears, but she continued to stay silent. I knew that she would understand that I was forced to leave her. It was my responsibility.

“Mu Zi, I’ve got to go. I need to make preparations for the upcoming battle in two days’ time. Please take care of yourself. If I survive this ordeal, I’ll definitely make up for all the deep feelings you have for me, alright?”

As both her arms clung tightly around my neck, Mu Zi’s delicate body trembled .

“Please don’t be like this, Mu Zi. Be good.” I carefully separated myself from her embrace. Seeing Mu Zi’s tear stained face, my heart trembled. I

shut my eyes to suppress the tears from falling. I abruptly turned around and feebly said in a shaky voice, “Mu Zi, I’m heading off.” I didn’t dare continue to stay, so I leapt off the ground and activated my divine power to soar into the sky.

## Chapter 18: Preparations Before Battle

“Zhang Gong, I love you so. You must survive and return!” Mu Zi’s voice resounded from behind me. My tears then started to flow uncontrollably. In the sunlight, they looked like strings of transparent gemstones, flying through the air in a moving and brilliant way. ‘Mu Zi, I wonder if I really will return after the battle with the Monster King.’

I took in a deep breath in order to suppress my emotions. Before flying towards the fort, I used my divine power to amplify my voice for me to shout, “To all members of the God Protector Domain, listen to my order, I am Zhang Gong Wei. Everyone please gather at the main entrance of the fort. Every member of the God Protector Domain are to heed my call.....” I repeated the order a couple of times and with my cultivation, every inch of the fort should have heard my voice.

A couple of figures were seen rapidly gathering at the main entrance of the fort. Seeing their agile figures, my heart was slightly comforted, while I also flew towards the entrance of the city.

Within moments, there was already a vast number of men from the God Protector’s Domain that had gathered. They were lined up in orderly platoon formations. There were scorching flames in their eyes as they looked at me hovering in the air. Within the time to prepare tea, I noticed that roughly 8,000 members had already gathered. This was the majority of the forces of the God Protector Domain.

I said clearly, “Brothers, I just returned only few days ago. I’m sure that most of you should have seen my arrival. Even though the Monster race has been pushed back by us only a few days ago, a more brutal battle would be commencing soon. I have bad news for you : the Monster King has resurrected. In two days’ time, he will lead his forces to attack our fort. The main forces of the three Kingdoms are already gathered at the fort, so if it were to fall, the human race is finished and the continent will be invaded by the merciless Monster race. The main goals of the God Protector Domain is to protect this continent and stop the invasion of the Monster race. No matter what, we must defend the fort til our death and

prevent them from succeeding. Even if we die for our goals, we shall persist.”

My voice could be heard throughout the fort and the 8,000 God Protectors stood still and silent. After a long time, I said solemnly, “The appearance of the Monster King so soon was beyond my expectations. You should all know Hai Shui. She is the same as Mu Zi, my beloved. Everyone, please don’t feel weird as to why I’m saying this now. It’s just that just a moment ago, I found out that Hai Shui’s body has been possessed by the Monster King. The current Hai Shui has become the sinister Monster King’s vessel. I order you, no matter who sees Hai Shui in the fort, you’re to immediately send out a warning. In the previous conflict with the Monster King, the remaining three elders sacrificed their lives to protect me. They have given up their lives for our final victory. Brothers, we must seek vengeance for the elders’ lives. Are you all willing to follow me and fight in the final battle with the Monster race?”

The five elders’ position in the God Protector Domain was even higher than mine. The most powerful experts among the God Protector’s Domain were the villagers led by the elders from the God’s village. All of their training up until now had been supervised by the five elders, they had very close relationships with each of the members from the God Protector’s Domain. After hearing the news of the elders’ death, the God Protectors instantly became enraged and many of their eyes turned blood red with fury. I didn’t inform them that Big Brother Zhan Hu and the rest could no longer participate in the battle. This was to prevent it from affecting their morale, since only the ultimate forbidden spell could be used to combat the Monster King. If they were to know that the ultimate forbidden spell was unable to be activated, they might become dispirited.

“We’ll fight to our deaths to avenge the elders.....”

“We will fight with all our might against those bastards.....”

“Even if we die, we won’t let them take a single step into the fort.....”

Yells and shouts were constantly heard throughout the fort. Even though there were patrolling soldiers from the three kingdoms, they

recognised that among all the squads, that they were the most valiant. During the past two years, the God Protectors' heroic name had widely spread to become the role model for all soldiers from the Three Kingdoms. This provided the impetus to spread their shouts of resistance against the Monster race until death all throughout the fort.

With my blood boiling, I shouted, "I, the God's Envoy Zhang Gong Wei, hereby swear that as long as I have a single breathe, I refuse to allow the Monster race to enter this fort!" However, I really felt my own demise nearing instead.

"To the God Protectors from the third, fourth, and fifth platoons. The 2,000 people within each, heed my orders! Starting now, you are to take turns patrolling the fort and send reports when any anomaly occurs. For the remaining God protectors, you are to immediately be on standby at the city gates, in readiness to battle the Monster race." We could currently only use the terrain of the fort to our advantage. I wasn't so dumb as to fight against the countless monsters head on in the plains outside the fort. With the powers of the God Protectors and the combined forces from the three kingdoms, the Monster race wouldn't be able to enter the fort unless I died.

After commanding them, I flew to land in the command center of the fort. The strategists of the three kingdoms had gathered here. Seeing my arrival, Teacher Di asked frowning, "Zhang Gong, I heard what you previously said. What's going on? Has Hai Shui really been possessed by Monster King?"

I nodded solemnly. "That's correct, Teacher. I won't be explaining that now. I need to trouble you, keep the soldiers of the Three Kingdoms on alert at all times, the Monster race could be invading anytime now. I'll stay and wait for them here. After tomorrow will be the final battle to determine the life or death of the continent." Upon saying that, I sat crossed-legged on the floor to recover my peak condition to effectively resist the Monster race.

I suppressed all emotion and tried my best to regain my calm in order to slowly enter into a meditative state.

.....

In the morning two days later, the sun already hung high in the sky, bringing limitless light and warmth to the continent.

In the gulf outside Ström Fortress, a faint grey aura slowly lurked from within. It started to thicken and an abnormal demonic aura slowly emerged. The clear sky was gradually affected by that demonic aura and slowly dimmed. Constant rustling sounds could be heard coming out of the gulf, giving people a hair-raising fear.

## Chapter 19: The Last Battle

At the gates of Ström Fortress, the mage army from Aixia and the warriors of both Xiuda and Dalu were arranged in strict formation, as they looked with hatred upon the demonic aura that was creeping from far away. There was also the strongest troops available, the God Protectors from the God Protector's Domain, by their side. Everyone knew that there was a possibility that this could be the last day of survival for the human race, but none cowered. They were already determined to sacrifice their lives for the sake of the world's peace and harmony, specifically for their families.

A white robed old mage said to a youth sitting cross-legged at his side. "Zhang Gong, they are coming."

The youth gradually opened his eyes. Suddenly, two cold rays shot out from them as he looked towards the gulf afar. His body naturally floated upwards with his body emitting a layer of golden lights. His divine aura gave people a sense of serenity and calmness. Six enormous golden wings emerged from that youth's back without any indications. He hovered in the sky, gently flapping his wings. Various elemental powers could be clearly seen, even by non-mages, gathering around the youth. The youth sighed. "Since they have come, let them come." Donning a silver mask, nobody could see his current expression. He gradually extended his gloved right hand. The glove was golden, and on the back of the glove was a transparent gemstone that emitted peculiar light rays in the sunlight.

The youth gently chanted, "The God King bestowed upon me the Radiant Holy Sword. It shall shine with the soaring radiance of the vault of the heavens."

The space surrounding the youth suddenly stilled. An exceptionally powerful divine aura had suddenly hovered before the youth. Everyone was dazed as they saw a magnificent silver longsword that appeared before him. He gradually reached out with his right hand to grab onto the hilt of the sword. When the golden glove came into contact with the silver sword, everyone felt as if they merged into a single identity. The

divine aura in the youth's surrounding intensified. He looked just like a second sun, currently shining upon the fort.

"Monster King, I'm awaiting for your arrival." An indifferent voice with limitless vicissitude was heard.

The demonic aura at the gulf seemed to have felt the provocation from the youth and it intensified. Following that, the rustling sounds that were heard were actually coming from densely packed monsters that appeared, just barely discernable from the demonic mists. It was different from their previous appearances, the monsters weren't simply charging over. Instead, they were gradually advancing in an orderly fashion. Their red eyes glowing with pure evil, there wasn't a speck of restlessness to be found in the crowd of monsters.

The innumerable monsters constantly advanced, with numerous monsters still emerging from the gulf. The vast plains were already covered by the countless monsters in such a short time. They didn't emerge to the other side of the gulf as their goal today was only the steadfast Ström Fortress.

Everyone's hearts in Ström Fortress gradually started beating faster. They held tightly onto their weapons and the mages started to preparing their incantations. The enormous, mighty magic cannons started glowing with dims lights, surging forth with power under the command of the mages nearby. They were waiting for the offensive attack from the Monster race.

When the monsters advanced within about a kilometer of the fort, they abruptly stopped and stood still. The countless monsters unexpectedly stood there quietly, not daring to make a sound. It was as though they were waiting for something.

.....

I gradually narrowed my eyes and looked at the countless monsters covering the plains. I had already recovered my peak state under the two days of recuperation. 'What would happen would always come. Monster King, let's have a death match today.'

A tyrannical power suddenly emerged from the sky that made me raise my head to have a look at what it was. Ah! It was the dragon race. Few hundreds of enormous dragons hovered at least 100 metres above us. I smiled as I knew that the dragon race wouldn't abandon me.

A speck of golden light charged downwards. "Master." That voice sounded so cordial to me. It was my life partner, Xiao Jin that had arrived. I hollered and flapped the six wings to land gently onto Xiao Jin's spacious back.

"Xiao Jin, my good brother, you have also came."

Xiao Jin said, "Master, how can I be absent today? My father said that he would stall the Monster King with all his might for a while to gain sometimes for you to eliminate the three Great Monsters and that no matter what would be the final result, it was all up to the heavens."

I looked with gratitude at the most enormous gold figure in the sky. The Dragon King was an elder that truly worth to be respected!

"Master, look there." Xiao Jin sounded a little tense.

I looked at the gulf of the gulf and saw three grey figures soared to the sky, quickly appearing above the monsters. There were the three Great Monsters, Dark Monster Jia Si Ke Li Duo, Witch Monster Ha Er Yue Di, and the Blood Monster Ka An Da Er Jia. The three of them didn't have their previous arrogance as they silently hovered in mid air. There was a vast amount of monsters that were flying behind them. Looking at those enormous wings that those monsters possessed, it was easy to know that they had great flying abilities. The amount of flying monsters this time was the most as compared to the previous times as they flew above the three Great Monsters. Constant flapping of wings could be heard. So this was the true strength of the Monster race!

A peculiar hollar came from the gulf. All of the monsters, including the three Great Monsters, expressed incomparable reverence. My heart sunk as it seemed that the Monster King had finally suppressed Hai Shui's will and successfully took over her body.

A faint blue light emerged like lightning and even I wasn't able to see

her figure clearly. After the flash of the blue light, there was another person standing in front of the three Great Monsters. It was Hai Shui. Hai Shui's hair was floating behind her back and was emitting a devilish grey blue light ray. Traces of red light rays could be seen occasionally in her changed grey eyes. The Monster King was still wearing the water mage robe that Hai Shui had worn previously with a faint smile on her face.

"Sigh!" The Monster King voiced in a non sinister nor upright manner. His voice that could make hair stand on its end. "It was really difficult to obtain this body. I didn't expect that that girl's will would be that strong. Brat, you are still planning to resist against me? You think you can battle against me with those reptiles? You're really seeking death. I advise you to submit towards me. I may perhaps then leave you your life!"

## Chapter 20: The Phoenix Returns

I bore with my feelings of disgust. I held the Holy Sword in both of my hands and with intensified light rays emitted from my body, I said, "Monster King, stop dreaming. If you want to take over this continent, you must walk over my dead body."

A cold light ray flashed in the Monster King's eyes. "Alright! I shall grant you your wish." With a brandish of her hand towards her subordinates, the three Great Monsters simultaneously roared and charged towards me at lightning speed. The monsters on the land and sky also charged frantically towards the Ström Fortress.

Large explosions was heard. The magic powered cannon at the head of the fort started to display its might. Every single artillery from it had taken at least 100 monsters' life with it. The dragon race was also emitted multicolored dragon's aura as they went to block the flying type monsters. The final battle had finally commenced.

Xiao Jin roared in fury and a gold light halo emerged from his body, with his head as the center. I knew that spell. It was the spell to break magic seals. Since time was pressing, I no longer dallied and soared into the sky. I slashed horizontally with both of my hands holding the sword towards the three Great Monsters. Under the combined power of Xiao Jin and mine, the three Great Monsters' body instantly stilled and after loud sound was heard, they were simultaneously knocked backwards. Xiao Jin let out a holler as he went to battle against the Blood Monster Ka An Da Er Jie, while I fought with all my might against the Dark Monster Jia Si Ke Li Duo and Witch Monster Ha Er Yue Di. Intense light rays wereas constantly being emitted from the Holy Sword, overwhelming the Dark and Witch Monsters.

The battle of the fort was also exceptionally intense. The mage army squad from the Kingdom of Aixia were able to bring forth enormous powers under the leadership of the light Magister Lao Lun Di and space Magister Chuan Song Zhen, killing a vast amount of monsters. However, the warriors at the city head didn't dare to relax as they knew that once

the mage powers weakened, it would be their turn to fight against the monsters. The battle was advancing like a wildfire.

“Radiant Holy Sword light slash!” A crescent moon like light ray slashed towards Dark Monster Jia Si Ke Li Dui and Witch Monster Ha Er Yue Di, making them to violently spurt out of blood as their bodies were blown backwards. I didn’t bother to chase after them. I just similarly struck towards the Blood Monster Ka An Da Er Jia, who was suppressing Xiao Jin. All of the three Great Monsters were then severely injured.

The Monster King held the Dark Monster Jia Si Ke Li Duo in one of her hands and the Witch Monster Ha Er Yue Di in her other. With the red light ray being intensified in her eyes, I was a little apprehensive as I knew that she could no longer hold back in making her moves. I hastily circulated all of my divine power into the Holy Sword as I focused on my terrifying opponent.

An elderly voice sounded. “Your opponent is me.” A 3m diameter enormous light ball was shot towards the Monster King. Anger flashed past the Monster King’s eyes. She violently tossed the Dark Monster Jia Si Ke Li Duo and Witch Monster Ha Er Yue Di towards me before brandishing one of her hands, making a grey fog to charge towards the enormous light ball. The light ball and grey fog disappeared at the same time, with no sound of a collision heard. The body of the Dragon King that was flying over shook greatly, while he used his enormous eyes to glare fixedly at the Monster King.

I knew that it wasn’t the time to be hesitating. The Dragon King definitely couldn’t be a match for the Monster King. He was just trying to gain some time for me. I brandished the Holy Sword, casting a Holy Light Crucifix towards the Dark Monster Jia Si Ke Li Duo and Witch Monster Ha Er Yue Di. Jia Si Ke Li Duo shouted in fury, making the Dark monster blade to metamorphose into an enormous grey shield to block before him, while Ha Er Yue Di transformed into a fog and entered Jia Si Ke Li Duo’s body. At this moment, I was in total shock as all of the injuries that they had unexpectedly healed completely. The Monster King was really terrifying as in such a short time span, she could actually heal all of their

inner injuries.

Once Ha Er Yue Di's body fused at the head of Jia Si Ke Li Duo, Jia Si Ke Li Duo's body abruptly expanded. It looked just an enormous balloon, making it look exceptionally horrifying. After a large sound was heard, it actually withstood my Holy Crucifix head on.

I was startled and immediately circulated the Divine powers in my body. While I held the Holy Sword with both hands, I brandished an arc in front of my body. With intense gold light rays emitted from my eyes, I said, word by word, "Devastating Holy Light!" A dazzling light ray abruptly emitted from the silver circle, making countless silver light rays to surge towards Jia Si Ke Li Duo.

A grey aura emitted from Jia Si Ke Li Duo's body as he brandished the Dark Monster Blade. With widened eyes, he shouted fumingly, "Combine the witch and dark powers to upturn the sky and land. Dark Monster's Annihilation Arrow!" Following his anger filled holler, the grey fog in the surrounding formed an arrow shape as it shot towards the divine light that I was giving off. Constant sounds of collision could be heard. Under the intense shock wave, my body was blown at least 100 meters back. Jia Si Ke Li Duo was however unexpectedly unharmed. How could this happen for my powers to be useless against him?

Xiao Jin continuously gave off a golden power. He used his claws to claw and used his mouth to bite the Blood Monster Ka An Da Er Jia. He didn't seem to be able to deal with him anytime soon. Even though the monster were frantically attacking the fort, the fort seemed to be able to temporarily bear with those attacks. With the Dragon race's help, no matter if it was land or sky, there temporarily shouldn't have any crisis happening soon.

A mournful screech was heard as the Dragon King's body soared into the sky with large amount of blood flowing down from his body. He obviously had been severely injured. The Monster King was actually able to severely injure the Dragon King in such a short time. If he had attacked me as well, I definitely wouldn't stand a chance.

A clear cry out from a phoenix was heard at this crucial and critical moment that it even shocked the Monster King that had just planned to chase after the Dragon King. A red figure flashed forth like lightning, instantly charging within the flying monsters. The red light ray seemed to have originated from hell as every places that it passed through, countless monsters would be killed and injured, forcefully forming a blood path as it flew towards the side of the Dragon King. The air also seemed to have heated up. Under the glimmering red light, the wounds on the Dragon King's body had stopped bleeding and looked more energetic. Ah! A teammate had arrived at such a crucial moment. It was the fire phoenix that was previously used by Si Feng Ri.

The Monster King said heavily, "What? You also want to mix into this muddy water/ to join this fray?"

## Chapter 21: Soloing the Three Great Monsters

The phoenix had spread its 33 meters enormous large flame covered wings saying, “Monster King, you had previously sealed my body and made me suffer for so many years. Today, it’s time for payback.” He turned his head towards me and with benevolent light rays in his eyes, he said, “Child, it’s time for me to repay what you had done for me. I didn’t forget my previous vow.”

My heart heated up and just as I wanted to reply him, an enormous pressure charged towards me. I hastily lifted the sword to block Jia Si Ke Li Duo’s attack. When the Dark Monster blade and the Holy Sword came into contact with each other, Jia Si Ke Li Duo and my body instantly shuddered violently before abruptly being blown backwards from the impact.

The phoenix in the sky didn’t seem to see what was happening as his sight was solely on the Monster King. “Dragon King, let’s fight along side against that monster today. No matter if we survive or die, we will have given our all.”

The Dragon King laughed. “Alright! Alright, Brother Phoenix, it has been such a long time since we last met. It should have been a few hundred years already. Your phoenix flames are still as scorching hot. Let’s give out a combination of dragon and phoenix roars today.” Upon saying that, the Dragon King raised his head to give out a clear dragon roar. With intense gold light ray being emitted from his body, it didn’t look as though he had just suffered from severe injuries. His domineering aura filled the sky. It was as though he wanted to prove his Dragon King’s identity to the world.

The phoenix similarly laughed before hollering as well. A dragon and a phoenix loud roars were constantly being rang in the sky towards the horizon. This change of situation momentarily increased my confidence. I brandished the Holy Sword with all my might, constantly striking against Jia SI Ke Li Duo’s Dark Monster blade.

The Monster King’s expression changed constantly with her arms

crossed before her chest, before saying coldly, “Since you’ve all gathered, I’ll grant all of wishes at once.” Upon saying that, her greyish blue long hair floated behind her back and with a demonic red light ray in her eyes, an enormous demonic source suddenly appeared from her back. The overpowering demonic aura filled the space behind her. The grey aura conflicted against the aura being emitted by the Dragon King and the phoenix.

“Ah!!” An unknown fury call out was heard. Gold, red and grey figures, varying in sizes, simultaneously charged towards the center. The three figures constantly conflicted against each other. The tyrannical powers being sent off by them made Jia Si Ke Li Duo, Xiao Jin, the Blood monster and I to be simultaneously forced at least 1 kilometer back. Looking at the current scene, it was still hard to see who had the upperhand in the battle.

I didn’t bother continuing to watch their battle as I released my powers to the limit and frantically fought against Jia Si Ke Li Duo. The radiant Holy Sword constantly came in contact with the Dark Monster blade without any gaudiness. The explosive like power filled the sky. Even though Jia Si Ke Li Duo’s power had increased drastically after the fusion of the bodies, his eyes seemed to be in a daze as it wouldn’t be easy for a body to house two spirits.

The radiant Holy Sword was the top divine instrument in the God world so how could the Dark Monster blade be able to withstand against it? Small nicks gradually appeared on the Dark Monster blade with each strike against each other. However, Jia Si Ke Li Duo didn’t seem to care about that as he continued to circulate his strong demonic powers to continuously fight against my sword.

The divine powers in my body seemed to be exceptionally excited. The six light wings on my back were constantly absorbing the nature energy from the surrounding. Powers like a large river continuously entered my body, allowing me to sustain my peak condition. The Holy Sword was also constantly striking towards Jia Si Ke Li Duo, a strike after a strike. As time flowed, the powers from the fusion body of Jia SI Ke Li Duo and Ha Er yue

Di gradually lessened as it could no longer withstand my attacks. His body was constantly being pushed back. The cracks on the Dark monster blade was increasingly getting larger.

Jia Si Ke Li Duo seemed to discover that he was at the disadvantage as he abruptly used all of his power to push me back while drawing a peculiar rune in the air with his left hand. He opened his mouth to emit a black fog. When the black fog got in contact with the strange rune, the black light ray intensified. A dozen enormous bone shaped black fog charged towards me. I thought, 'He still wants to resist even after knowing that his demise is nearing?' I used the Holy Sword to draw an arc before my body. The silver light ray, as well as the devastating Holy light, was abruptly emitted from it. The vast silver light ray seemed to engulf all of the bone fogs. The bone was constantly resisting in the Holy Light. It seemed as though it wasn't to breakout from comfort. But how could I let that happen? I constantly surged powers into the Holy Sword by the God's Guard protector to maintain the intensity of the Holy Light.

Finally, after a moment of abnormal shrieks, all of the bones finally dissipated. Jia Si Ke Li Duo seemed to suffer severe injuries as his entire body shook violently. I definitely wouldn't let such a good opportunity slip. With my body and sword as one identity, I charged over. The silver light ray of the Holy Sword suddenly withdrew. It seemed as though it was gathering all of its power into the Holy Sword

Fear was seen in Jia Si Ke Li Duo's eyes. He violently raised the Dark Monster blade with both of his hands to strike towards me. He was already at his last moments so how could I still reserve my strength? With a shout, the Holy Sword in my hand gave off a mesmerizing light ray, I struck towards the nicks covered Dark Monster blade. The blade and sword came into contact with each other again. I was having a close combat with Jia Si Ke Li Duo. We were circulating our powers with all out might to suppress each other. Jia Si Ke Li Duo's nicked covered Dark Monster blade gradually started to break down under the might of the Holy Sword.

"Go to hell!" Upon my furious holler, the Holy Sword had been

circulated to its limit. The grey aura from the Monster blade from the Dark Monster blade gradually faded. I was currently at Jia Si Ke Li Duo's bak. His expanded body just silently hovered there. It was like time had stilled.

Hong! Demon King Satan's body that was being possessed by Jia Si Ke Li Duo had completely blown apart. A grey fog appeared from his body and headed like lightning towards the Blood Monster Ka An Da Er Jia, who was fighting against Xiao Jin. When I sliced Jia Si Ke Li Duo's body with the Holy Sword, I had clearly felt that Jia Si Ke Li Duo's soul had been obliterated by the Holy Sword's tyrannical divine powers. There was no longer his soul in Demon King Satan's body, while the Witch Monster Ha Er yue Di's soul seemed to have been severely damaged. It was that grey fog that was currently trying to escape from me. Of course, I wouldn't let what had previously happened to occur again as if Ha Er Yue Di fused with the Blood Monster Ka An Da Er Jia's body, I would have to undergo another bitter battle.

## Chapter 22: Eternal Recovery Light

I made the Holy Sword freely hover mid air as I made natural hand seals with both of my hands in the air. An enormous gold rune appeared in my hand. “Go!” When I casually brandished my hand, the gold rune flashed and disappeared towards the escaping Witch Monster Ha Er Yue Di. The gold rune entered the grey fog into which Ha Er Yue Di’s body had metamorphosed, his body abruptly halted midair. Gold specks were shining through the originally black fog. The golden ray of light within gradually intensified. Ha Er Yue Di’s shrieks came from the black fog. Poof! The black fog and the golden light simultaneously disappeared in thin air. I had killed two of the three Great monsters in but a short moment.

I glanced at the Monster King, the Dragon King, and the phoenix, who were fighting. From the looks of it, they hadn’t been able to get a clear outcome of who was in the lead. I didn’t have time to recover as I grabbed onto the Holy Sword before me. My body turned into a silver ray as I charged in the direction of the Blood Monster Ka An Da Er Jia’s and Xiao Jin’s fight. I had to deal with him before I could go and assist the Dragon King. The signs of victory were slowly showing on my side. I had regained my lost confidence.

The Blood Monster Ka An Da Er Jia seemed to feel that his life was in jeopardy. He was constantly brandishing his fist. The blood mist and Xiao Jin’s golden light were violently clashing against each other. Their bodies were tumbling about in midair. I was startled as the six light wings spread behind my back. The Holy Sword flew out of my hands, shaping a magnificent arc towards Ka An Da Er Jia. The Holy Sword was giving off an exceptionally intense divine aura, sealing off every path of escape for the Blood Monster. The tip of the silver ray ground violently against the blood mist. “Die!” Following that, I, who had caught up with them, grabbed the Holy Sword in both hands and thrust out with all of my might. The gold light ray lightened the space in the surrounding. The blood mist was no longer able to inhibit the Holy Sword’s advance, so he could only let out a mournful shriek that shook the heavens when the

Holy Sword deeply pierced his body.

“Lord Monster King will avenge me!” Ka An Da Er Jia said furiously. He used both of his hands to strike at his own chest. Hong! He had unexpectedly chosen to self destruct. The enormous shockwave following the disappearance of the Blood Monster blew me away. Having used up a lot of divine power, as the divine powers in my body violently roiled over and over, it made me cough a mouthful of blood. The gold light ray emitted from my body dimmed slightly.

I didn’t have the time to recover. Once I stabilized my body, I immediately flew to Xiao Jin’s side. I brandished the Holy Sword to enclose Xiao Jin’s body in my divine powers. Under my assistance, the corrosive blood mist was finally excreted from Xiao Jin’s body. Even though he looked feeble, I knew he was fine.

“Xiao Jin, take a break first. I’ll head on to help your father and the others to eliminate the Monster King,” I instructed Xiao Jin, who was panting profusely.

“Master, please be careful,” Xiao Jin said concerned.

I smiled and replied, “Don’t worry. The sinister beings will forever be unable to triumph against us!” Upon saying that, I raised the Holy Sword with both hands, wanting to charge over to the Dragon King and phoenix’s side, who were battling against the Monster King.

At this moment, the Monster King seemed to be enraged, as a mournful shriek came from the three figures. A grey ball of power shot out like lightning. I was alarmed and didn’t bother heading to deal with the Monster King. I continuously brandished to cast a solid light net in front of me. I knew the strength of the Monster King. I wouldn’t be able to withstand his tremendous power head on.

The grey ball of power rapidly neared me. When I thought I would have to deal with it soon and tried my best to increase my divine power to my peak state, the grey ball suddenly descended. It moved a couple of folds faster as it headed towards the Ström Fortress. The power that I had sent out in midair instantly made me spurt another mouthful of blood because

of my misjudgment of power usage. I could only watch as the grey ball of power fly towards the fort.

“No!” The grey ball with exceptionally destructive power struck the fort head-on. The firm fort shook violently for a while; an enormous hole appearing in the center of the fort. The casual attack from the Monster King had already taken at least 1000 human lives with it. The frantic monsters increased their momentum in heading towards the fort. Their goal was the newly formed hole. Since the humans were still stunned by the sudden large explosion, their resistance fell back, allowing a portion of the monsters to charge into the fort in no time.

I couldn’t continue towards the Monster King in order to eliminate her. With bloodshot eyes, I flew towards the fort. In the instant when the grey ball of power had exploded, I clearly saw the despair and hopelessness expressed in the human soldiers’ eyes. I definitely wouldn’t allow the monsters to succeed. If I didn’t hinder their advance, the fort would truly be unable to hold up. The Holy Sword, shining with an intense silver radiance, strongly pierced from above the hole. The monsters emerging from the hole turned to ashes under the peerless might of the divine powers. I constantly struck out silver rays with bloodshot eyes. My constant attack resulted in a vast amount of dead and injured monsters. On the flat plan of the fort, carnage had been raised in but a short while. Countless monster lives had been lost under the Holy Sword.

Fury hollers could be heard from the Dragon King and the phoenix. I knew clearly that they couldn’t withstand the attacks of the Monster King much longer, but I couldn’t leave the fort at the moment. What should I do? A thought flashed through my mind, and I started to chant, meanwhile hindering the monsters’ advancement. “Oh great light elements, you possess limitless powers. The darkness before you is too insignificant. Recovery light in the horizon, I beseech you to descend into world and bestow unlimited recovery light to me. Recover all pains and make all sufferings leave us—Forbidden Eternal Recovery Light!” Visible light spots constantly gathered with me as their center. I felt as though I was taking a bath in the sea of light. It was indescribably comfortable.

The light elements were so cordial as they completely listened to my command. When an enormous gold hexagon appeared beneath my feet, it immediately lit up the dark skies.

## Chapter 23: Annihilation Light Ray

The warmth of the light elements cleansed my soul. The gold hexagon underneath my feet shook slightly. An enormous gold light pillar enclosed me within as it extended into the sky. It pierced through the clouds and illuminated the horizon. Fragrance gradually permeated the lands. Light rain fell onto the world under the radiance of the golden light. It covered the head of the city and a 500 meters radiance in front of the fort. The improvised recovery light calmed the panicking human soldiers down. The rain was recovering their injuries and temporarily stopped the attacks from the monsters. I had gained sometimes for the human race to recover under my hard work.

In the gold light ray, there was suddenly a vast amount of green lights seen. A vast amount of monsters outside the perimeter of the light rain were instantly killed under the attack of the green light. Ah! Green long arrows covered the sky. It was the long arrows from the Nature Elves race. The Nature Elves finally caught up at the most crucial moment.

The king of the Nature Elves led the few elders and a huge troop of Nature Elf soldiers to fly to the head of the city. Green long arrows were constantly shot out from their short bows. Their arrows accurately struck the monsters. There were lots of white rays observed from the arrows. It was the elementary light magic that I had previously taught them.

With their help, the monsters definitely wouldn't be able to break into the Ström Fortress. My worries about leaving the fort had finally settled. I didn't have the time to meet up with the Nature Elves. I circulated the remnants of the divine powers in my body that I had already used more than half of them already. I soared into the sky. With the silver radiance covered Holy Sword, I charged towards the Dragon King and the phoenix that were battling the Monster King with my sword as a single identity.

"Radiant Holy Sword Light Slash!" With a furious holler, the light ray of the Holy Sword abruptly intensified. It accurately landed on the grey light ray that was tangled with the Dragon King and the phoenix's powers. The Monster King let out a mournful furious shout. The grey aura

momentarily intensified. The tyrannical powers that wasn't resistible had blown me, who was charging towards them, backwards. Gold and red figures also flew backwards. We flew for about 1 kilometer before we could stabilize our body. I couldn't bear not to cough up a mouthful of blood. My inner injuries had gotten more severe. The Dragon King and the phoenix hovered at my left and right side respectively. The originally gorgeous fiery wings had already drastically dimmed. A constant flow of blood came out from the mouth of the Dragon King. The previous usual radiance of his had seem to have disappeared. They had sustained severe injuries in the previous battle.

The Monster King hovered before us. Her clothes at her right sleeves had been damaged, revealing her white skin. I was alarmed to find that even under the combined forces of the Dragon King and the phoenix, she didn't seem be have any injuries. There was fury in her eyes and the death aura emitting from her body became much heavier.

"All of you goes against me. If it wasn't that I didn't want to be hurt, I'll have already killed all of you. Stinky brat, don't even think that you have the hope in destroying my Monster race just by eliminating my three Great Monsters. If I don't die, I'll still be able to revive them effortlessly as many times as I wanted. I can clearly tell you that I'm really angry right now and the outcome of that is severe. All of you can just die!" Upon saying that, the Monster King extended her arms horizontally. The grey aura in her surroundings suddenly became frantic as it constantly revolved, increasingly violently. It blocked our visions. But even with such a thick grey fog, we still could catch two peculiar light rays, which were the Monster King's eyes.

I looked at the Dragon King and the phoenix. There were resolution in their eyes. I shouted, "Let's go and have a life or death match with the Monster King."

The Dragon King raised his head and cried out. The enormous dragon wings spread apart. A mouthful of blood spurted from his mouth and the gold light rays from his body intensified suddenly. Sentences of an unknown strange incantation was constantly chanted calmly. Ah! It was

the dragon race dragon language spell. It seemed that he was giving it his best shot. Following the chant, the golden light ray of the Dragon King's body constantly intensified. The huge pressure from him gave me difficulty to breath. It seems that this was the last move from the Dragon King!

A cold flashed past the phoenix's eyes when the Dragon King started to chat his spell. The phoenix's body shrunk by a half and the scorching heat could be felt in the air again. His body slowly turned faint red. The heat waves that continuously struck my body made me to soar higher in the sky.

The Dragon King, the phoenix and I maintained a triangular formation. I raised the Holy Sword high up with both of my hands and chanted, "The God King bestowed upon me the Radiant Holy Sword. It shall shine with the soaring radiance of the vault of the heavens." Under the prompt from the chant, the radiant Holy Sword momentarily formed an enormous silver pillar that extended towards the horizon. I chanted loudly again, "Hope of light in the heaven and earth, please bless me! Great light elements, my everlasting friends, please gives as our final hope for me. Illumination lights in the East, warm lights in the West, life light in the South and devastative light in the North, I beseech you to gather the hope of light in the surroundings to give rise the light of blessings and bestow all of your divine powers onto me to activate the ultimate devastative light of the radiant Holy Sword. Eliminate the source of sinister beings before me to return eternal hope to the world—Holy Sword's Forbidden Annihilation Light!"

Following the chant, the divine powers in my body seemed to have found its outlet as it constantly surged into the Holy Sword. The surrounding light elements frantically gathered towards me with an unprecedented speed. Constant tearing like pain could be felt from the light wings on my back due to the too rapid gathering speed of light elements that it reached to a point that it was above its limit. The Holy Sword's colour was constantly changing from red, orange, green, dark green, blue and violet before gradually turning gold. The silver light from

the Holy Sword formed into an exceptionally large power in a fused sword as it floated above me. I gritted my teeth to control that horrifying powers as I looked at the enormous grey tornado that could destroy the heavens and earth by the Monster King.

The Dragon King seemed to have completed his spell. His turned golden eyes gave off a domineering aura. He shouted fumingly, "Savage Dragon Battle!" An intensified gold light ray was emitted from his body and following those words, the gold light ray unexpectedly formed an identical image of himself before him. The light ray from the Dragon King's body then instantly vanished. His originally magnificent scales also turned dull without radiance as it was already all of his powers.

## Chapter 24: Might of the Phoenix and Dragon

At the same time, the Phoenix halved his body size again, becoming a quarter of its original size. The peculiar faint red colour emitted tremendous strength, The temperature in the surroundings increased continuously. “Heavenly Phoenix Dance!” A black pheonix formed from power appeared before him. The air in the surrounding had abruptly heated up. I still felt the scorching heat even though there was a distance between him and I and also having additional protection from the divine powers.

The Monster King’s power seemed to have reached its limit. An enormous grey tornado that had reached at least 100 meters in height blew towards us. Sinister aura was constantly emitted from it. The monsters on the land and in the sky frantically charged towards the fort after losing the protection of the Eternal Recovery light.

The Dragon King, the phoenix and I looked at one and other before harmoniously letting out a holler. “Ah!!!” The Forbidden Annihilation of Light from the Holy Sword, the last ultimate move from the Dragon King, Savage Dragon Battle, and the clone of the phoenix, Heavenly Phoenix Dance, gave off silver, gold, and red lights respectively as they simultaneously shot towards the eye of the grey tornado.

My body seemed to have weakened after releasing the Annihilation Light as I was almost drained of all divine powers. I forcefully supported myself to land on the solid back of the Dragon King. The Dragon King and phoenix’s conditions were similar to mine. The phoenix also gathered towards the Dragon King’s side, We looked at the strongest attack that we had released and anticipated for the outcome.

When the Annihilation Light, Savage Dragon Battle, and Heavenly Phoenix Dance simultaneously struck the center of the tornado, everything seemed to have stilled. The strange grey tornado that the Monster King had released stilled and no longer revolved.

The phoenix suddenly exclaimed, “Not good! Retreat!” He suddenly flew towards the fort, bringing the Dragon King with him.

There wasn't any sounds heard and the time seemed to return to being normal, but there was an unexpected shock wave that struck behind us, making our three bodies to soar high up into the sky from the impact. The phoenix and the Dragon King used their bodies to block majority of the impact of the shockwave. I suffered the least injury, but I still couldn't help to cough out a few mouthful of blood. If it wasn't for my light wings to constantly absorb the light elements in the surrounding, I wouldn't be able to hold on.

I didn't know how far we flew, but our bodies finally stopped. The injuries sustained by the Dragon King seemed to be most severe amongst us as he had to completely rely on the phoenix's help to hover in the sky.

The Dragon King said solemnly, "Zhang Gong, we can no longer assist you any further. Everything will lie on you."

I became anxious. "Uncle Dragon King, how are you? Are your wounds critical?"

The Dragon King looked at the phoenix at his side that was emitting dim lights. "Don't worry. With the phoenix that titled to be immortal here, we won't die, but I doubt we will be able give assistance to the human race in the next 100 years. Zhang Gong, when you head back, tell Xiao Jin that the phoenix and I are heading to a place to recuperate. If you really annihilate the Monster race, let him to rule over the Dragon race in my place. Work hard, child. I believe that you definitely will be able to succeed. Even though we both had lost our fighting powers, the attack that was released from the three of us won't be easy to be dealt with. The Monster King definitely will be severely wounded. Even though it won't be as severe as our injuries, it definitely will be beneficial for your future attacks. I'm sorry, but we'll make our move first." Upon saying that, a gold light flashed past the Dragon King's eyes. A power suddenly surged into my body. The powers in my body that seemed to have withered momentarily became active under the assistance of the Dragon King's divine powers. It was rapidly absorbing the light elements in the surroundings.

The Dragon King looked benevolent at me before his body softened and

closed his eyes. The phoenix let out a screech before flying towards the far distance, while bringing the Dragon King along with him. I controlled my body to hover in the sky. I couldn't help but to be stunned. According to what the Dragon King had said, our combined attack couldn't defeat the Monster King. Currently, I had also lost the assistance of the Dragon King and the phoenix. Just how was I going to battle against that powerful Monster King?! I gritted my teeth and made my descent. I frantically gathered the light elements in my surrounding while controlling my flight path. When I flew to the front of the fort, the powers in my body had already recovered by third under the previous help of the dragon powers from the Dragon King.

The sight before me amazed me. A large gap was unexpectedly observed from the monsters that originally covered the heaven and the earth; the monsters that were within 1 kilometer diameter from the ground and sky from where I was had disappeared, forming a large shallow pit on the plain. This must be effect of our combined powers. I was extremely elated when I saw this as not only was the fort temporarily safe, I also understood that the Monster King was unable to suppress the boundary from the combined powers of three people. It could be said that the Monster King couldn't resist the enormous shockwave from our attacks so he deviated it to the ground, resulting in a great loss of monsters. It seemed that fellow was really hurt as what the Dragon King had mentioned.

The enormous dragons in the sky that were battling against the monsters seem to have become berserk in annihilating the monsters. They didn't cared about their injuries and just constantly attack their enemies before them; constant green blood flow downwards. I sighed inwardly. It must be due to their king being severely wounded that made those dragons become so stirred up.

I looked at the gulf and saw that the Monster King had actually disappeared. However, large quantities of monsters were still constantly emerging from the gulf and were rapidly charging towards the fort. I hastily flew to Xiao Jin's side. "Xiao Jin, your father suffered severe

injuries and had already went with the phoenix to recuperate. Before he left, he had told me to inform you that you'll temporarily lead the Dragon race. Quickly go! The current condition of the members of your race are too frenetic. You must control them. You just need to protect the fort. You also don't need to fight the monsters head on. The Monster King is the sole key in ending everything."

Boundless sorrows were expressed from Xiao Jin's eyes. "Master, is my father really still alive? Then, why can't I feel his life force? It was due to that that made my race's members be in such a state. Master, you mustn't lie to me!" Two large trails of tears flowed out from Xiao Jin's dragon eyes.

## Chapter 25: Demon Emperor's Arrival

I sighed. "Xiao Jin, I definitely wouldn't lie to you. What I said is the truth. Quickly go and calm down your race's members. It seems that the Monster King hasn't given up yet."

Xiao Jin nodded before soaring up into the sky. He was yelling in dragon language. I didn't have the time to look at their conditions as I closed my eyes to circulated the divine powers in my body with all of my strength, absorbing all the power in the surroundings. I was already getting out of time. The possibility of defeating the Monster King would increase for every ounce of power I absorb. But the truth was the Monster King wouldn't give me time to recover as a thick demonic aura covered the heaven and earth, making me reopen my eyes. Hai Shui's beautiful body hovered in midair. From her appearance, there didn't seem to have much changes since grey aura was constantly being emitted from her back and the sky turned dark again. I clearly knew that even if the Monster King was hurt, it would still be simple to kill me. Was there really no justice? Was all of the life forms of the world going to be eradicated by the Monster King? No! I definitely wouldn't allow that to happen. I hollered, resummoning the Radiant Holy Sword that was emitting dimmer light rays when compared to before, as I viciously glared at the Monster King.

The Monster King didn't say anything. She just extended her pair of delicate arms and constantly made gestures in the air. The grey aura gradually solidified. She was giving me her last attack. Even though I knew that it was useless resisting against that, I still prompted the release of the remaining divine powers from my body. The silver light ray of the Holy Sword intensified slightly. It wouldn't matter if I died. Even if I was facing death, I would still do all I could against that last attack.

When I was already in despair, the Monster King suddenly dazed and abruptly turned around. A patch of faint purple light was seen in the originally dark sky. An enormous figure was charging toward the Monster King. The purple light ray was given off from the back of the black figure. A low and heavy voice was heard. "Dark Magic Dragon Gun, my Demon race's god of Origin, release your endless divine powers to eliminate the

enemy before you.” An exceptional sharp light shot out like lighting from the top of the black figure. In a short moment, it had reached the front of the Monster King. The Monster King yelled in anger and used the previously consolidated grey power ball to defend her body. Hong! Her body unexpectedly flew at least 100 metres back. Cold light ray often glimmered in her eyes and the grey aura surrounding her body was strong and weak from time to time. It was as though she was trying to recover from her condition.

Seeing such a sight, I was jubilant as the person that came was none other than my father in law, Demon Emperor Qi Meng Satan. A loud dragon roar has heard as the Dark Demon Dragon had already brought the Demon Emperor to near us. The Demon Emperor stood arrogantly on the Demon dragon’s back as he looked icily at the Monster King. The black Dark Demon Gun in his hand was pointing towards the horizon as he shouted, “I didn’t expect that the Monster King would be such a young girl.”

I flapped the six light wings on my back to fly to the Demon Emperor’s side as I said respectfully, “Lord Father in law, why have you come? The Monster King isn’t a young girl. He had possessed my friend’s body. How is the condition at the Demon and Beast races’ side? Have the monsters eradicated?”

The Demon Emperor looked at me. “There isn’t any problem at our side. Royal Uncle and the Beast King had let our mighty army troops to finish off all of the remnants monsters. Previously the Demon Dragon felt that there was something unusual here so we headed to here first. How’s your situation here and how’s Mu Zi?”

I smiled wryly. “Our situation here is extremely terrible. The Dragon King and the phoenix had already been severely injured by the Monster king and had went to recuperate. Mu Zi is fine. She’s still inside the fort. Let’s team up to deal with that fellow. His powers are extremely terrifying. You must be careful.” Even though the cultivation of the Demon Emperor couldn’t be compared to mine, with the addition of the Dark Demon Dragon that had comparable strength to the Dragon King,

we would still be a force to be reckon with. When I mentioned that the Dragon King was severely injured, I could clearly feel that the Dark Demon Dragon's body jolted and an intense dark aura was released from his body, making me feel abnormally uncomfortable. It seemed that he and the Dragon King still had strong brotherly feelings!

The Demon King looked at the blood stains at my chest. "You should return to the fort to rest up while I fight against that fellow. You're wounded so even if you stay here, you'll just get in the way."

Even though the Demon Emperor's expression was cold, a warm feeling rose up from the bottom of my heart. "Lord father in law, I....." I knew that it was due to his attribute that countered mine and on top of that I was injured so he said that to prevent affecting me by his power.

The Demon Emperor shouted fumingly, "Since you had already called me your father in law, you should listen to me. The three races had already form an alliance so our Demon race must also contribute some of our strength. Quickly go!" Upon saying that, he prompted the Dark Demon Dragon and with purple light ray emitted from the Demon gun in his hand, he charged towards the Monster King.

The Demon King was fighting to help me gain some time. I no longer hesitated as I flew to the head of the fort. I must recover as soon as possible as the Monster King's power had already decreased drastically. I must recover my cultivation to completely eradicate him while he was still injured. I landed on the head of the city like a gold shooting star. Currently, the Dragon Army troop from the Kingdom of Xiuda was guarding the previous hole that formed from the Monster King's attack, while the archers of the Nature Elves and mages gave them solid support, making it impossible for the monsters to break into the fort. The condition in the sky had become stabilized. Under the division by Xiao Jin, the Dragon race's member formed two teams to help resist the offensive powers of the monsters.

When I just landed on the head of the city, I saw the deathly pale complexion Teacher Di, who was being supported by Teacher Zhen as they rested at a side.

“Teacher, how’s your condition?” I asked anxiously.

Teacher Di laughed forcefully. “I still won’t kick my bucket anytime soon. Zhang Gong, quickly do what you need to do. We had been watching what had happened. The Monster King really is horrifying. You must eliminate him today. Otherwise, the human race will be finished.” Upon saying that, he violently coughed for a couple of times.

I seriously nodded. “Teacher, don’t worry. Even if it leads to my death, I’ll fight with all my might against the Monster King to the very end. Teacher Zhen, I’ll have to ask you to take care of Teacher Di.”

## Chapter 26: Flame of Life! Burn!

Teacher Zhen nodded. “Quickly go and rest up. Lao Lun has me for support.”

I nodded. Just as I wanted to sit down and start meditating, I suddenly discovered that there were a couple of people that flew out from the interior of the fort. The couple of them were Big Brother Zhan Hu, Mu Zi, and the rest. Mu Zi used her wind magic to support Zhan Hu, Xiu Si, Xin Ao’s body, while Xiao Rou that had metamorphosed to her human form and used her powers to support Gao De and Dong Ri’s body. When did Xiao Rou become so strong? What I didn’t know that after Xiao Rou became 9 tailed, her powers had risen to the A rank beast level. Even though her strength was inferior to Xiao Jin’s, her powers was similar to Mu Zi’s cultivation.

I dazely saw them land to my side and cried out, “Mu Zi, why are you so disobedient? Why did you bring everyone here?”

Zhan Hu chuckled. “Zhang Gong, we’re also god envoys that had received the task of eliminating the Monster King from the God King. How could we not participate in this battle? Even though our cultivations are weaker in comparison, we must watch as you kill the enemy. We’ll morally support you.” Xiu Si and the rest constantly nodded. It was obvious that they agreed with Zhan Hu’s opinion, while Mu Zi wordlessly stared at me with her mesmerizing eyes.

I didn’t know whether to laugh or cry as I looked at them. “This place is too dangerous. You should head back.”

Xiao Rou replied, “Master, please let us stay here. Elder sister Mu Zi and I will take care of the few brothers.”

I knew it was useless to say further as I looked at the resolute eyes of the crowd. I sighed and said, “Mu Zi, Xiao Rou, I’ll ask for your help to protect the brothers.”

Mu Zi suddenly exclaimed, “Ah! Isn’t that my Royal father?” She dazedly looked at the Demon Emperor who was currently in battle.

I nodded. "That's right, if it wasn't for lord father in law to come in time, you probably would not have been able to see me anymore. Alright, I won't continue to chat with you guys as I need to recover my body's power as soon as possible so that I can assist Lord father in law to deal with the Monster King." Upon saying that, I sat cross-legged, amending the aura in my body.

At this moment, the Demon Emperor and the Dark Demon dragon were blasted backwards by the Monster King after constantly being pestered by them. The Dark Dragon gave off a mournful holler. It seemed that his injuries wasn't light. Not good! I hastily soared into the sky to catch the falling Demon Emperor. The Dark Demon Gun of the Demon Emperor was already nowhere to be found. With his face like gold paper, the Demon Emperor had lost his consciousness. I couldn't help but to feel a chill pass through my body as I looked at the Monster King that was still a distance from me. He didn't chase over and just silently hovered in mid air. My last chance of recovery was already gone. The Demon Dragon and the Demon Emperor were severely injured now so the only one that could fight against the Monster King would only be me.

I landed on the head of the city and handed the Demon Emperor to Mu Zi. I mustn't lose! I definitely mustn't. I looked solemnly at Mu Zi and Xiao Rou before taking a deep breathe. "Please take care of yourselves." 'It's time to fight with my life on the line. Monster King, you bastard, let us die together then.' A sudden terrifying thought flashed through my mind at this moment.

I gradually flew and said to Zhan Hu and the four brothers, "Big brothers, please summon your divine instruments. What else can you do now? Please separate the divine instruments from your body and let it to hover in the sky."

The crowd nodded and simultaneously chanted. The War God's armour, Sky God's horn, Titan God's hammer, Lightning God's shield and Wind God's bow respectively hovered in mid air in the next moment. The five brothers had forcefully controlled their weapons. The injuries they sustained that day was really too severe. Otherwise, with their assistance,

how could I be forced into such a hopeless scenario?

I looked at the crowd one last time. I no longer hesitated as I looked at the Monster King and chanted loudly, “Burn my endless flame of life to release my power of origin to emit the last rays of light!” I chanted the burning of life force spell without any regrets and remorse. This was an irreversible spell. Initially, when Teacher Di taught me this spell, he had told me that I shouldn’t use it lightly unless I was in a life or death scenario as once this spell was used, it would burn the life force of the caster’s body as time passes. When I cast this spell, I had completely burned all of my life force. I didn’t care about the after effects and just unleashed all of my potential powers to be able to fight against the Monster King.

When Teacher Di, who was leaning in Teacher Zhen’s embrace, heard my chant, he immediately shouted in horror, “Zhang Gong, you mustn’t... you mustn’t use that spell!!!”

I smiled at Teacher Di and bowed deeply towards him. “Teacher, thank you for your many years of tutelage. Zhang Gong no longer would be able to serve you. Please help me to take care of my parents.”

Whatever said now was already too late as the surrounding of my body had started to burn with multi-coloured flames. When the dazzling multi-coloured light ray was emitted from my body, a unprecedented tyrannical power surged up from my heart. The Holy Sword regained its former radiance and had possessed an even greater powers as compared to before. Light rays were like electricity flickering in my surroundings. The divine instruments that Zhan Hu and the others had summoned seemed to have felt the Holy Sword’s power and were constantly crying out.

Mu Zi shouted, crying, “No! Zhang Gong, no!”

Tears flowed from from my face as I said mournfully, “Farewell, my lovers and my friends! Let’s meet again in our next lives!” I brandished the Holy Sword to terminate the relationships of the divine instruments from Zhan Hu and the rest and used my divine power to cover the five divine instruments before charging towards the Monster King, who was

gathering his powers.

I stopped flying when I was only 100 meters from the Monster King. The Monster King seemed to be slightly apprehensive as he looked at the five divine instruments in my surrounding and the multi-coloured flames being emitted from my body. He shouted, “Are you insane? Was it really worth it for you to use your limitless life force for those low class creatures?”

I coldly said, “You forever won’t be able to understand that there are many things that are more important than being alive. Let’s start our death match, Monster King.”

## Chapter 27: Death Match

The expression of the Monster changed constantly from elation and sinister and back before saying, “Brat, if you stop hindering me from eliminating all of the life forms, once I’ve succeeded, I’m willing to equally share all of my power over the continent with you. How about that?” The Monster King seemed to be a little frightened against me that had death as my mind set. Was he fearful of me?”

Feeling the powers that were surging out from my body, I asked indifferently, “Equally share all of your powers over the continent with me? Is that right?”

The Monster King nodded. “That’s correct, if you’re willing to stand on my side, I won’t attack you and after I get hold of this place, I’m willing to equally share all of my power over the continent with you.”

I laughed. “What could power amount to? Do you really think I care about them? If I liked power, I wouldn’t be standing here today.” Upon saying that, I brandished my hand and a fissure appeared in the sky. Under my control, five power balls flew out from my space pocket. The five surrounding divine instruments seemed to be shivering in excitement as they tried to break free from my power’s restrictions.

I took in a deep breath and used the powers inside my body to protect my inner organs. I abruptly remove all of the restrictions on the divine instruments before shouting, “War God, Sky God, Titan God, Lightning God and wind God fuse together! Divine powers!” I forcefully suppressed five of the divine instruments into my body with the power of the Holy Sword while I chanted. The five light orbs also mixed with the War God, Sky God, Titan God, Lightning God and Wind God powers, and instantly fused with my body.

The Monster King finally understood what I planned to do as he shouted,

“No!!!!” He abruptly charged towards me.

The multi-coloured light ray emitted from my body, momentarily filling

the heaven and earth with its light. The tyrannical power of the Monster king had unexpectedly been rebounded back so he could just stunningly looked at me, who was drastically gaining powers.

I actually didn't know what would happen from fusing all five divine instruments. All I thought was how to eliminate the Monster King. When the five divine wills fused into my body, my body seemed to be going to explode as intense heart piercing pain was felt in the next instant. If it wasn't for Mi Jia Lie modifying my body, I would have exploded at this moment. I hollered in pain, "Ah!!!" The Ice God's mask transmitted his ice powers to sustain my consciousness at an appropriate moment.

Six different divine powers constantly conflicted in my body. Even though the Radiant God's power was the strongest, it still couldn't suppress the five divine powers in my body. Thin blood rain mist was emitted from all of my body's hair pores. Tremendous pain constantly filled my body. If it wasn't for the magnanimous powers that I possessed from burning my life force, I would have already been torn apart by the tyrannical powers inside.

The Monster King looked, stunned at me. "Insane! That brat has gone nuts!"

I looked at the Monster King with bloodshot eyes. Different coloured lightning bolts were constantly being shot out from my body. Enormous power could be felt in my surroundings. I withdrew the Holy Sword's power into my body to forcefully suppressed the tyrannical divine powers in my body as I raised my head to chant furiously, "The God King bestowed upon me the War God's armor. No evil shall pass me for I shall obstruct the evil demons." Following my chant, the War God's armour that had formed into a blue power in my body seemed to have found an outlet. The blue light ray abruptly shot out from my body. Big Brother Zhan Hu's armour appeared on my body. When the armour was donned on my body, I felt that the frantic powers in my body calmed down slightly, making me feel much more comfortable.

The Monster King retreated backwards and was sneakily headed towards the gulf. It seemed that he already had the mindset of retreating

against the berserk me.

“Want to escape from me?” I aligned my palms together and the light in my surrounding abruptly intensified. An enormous boundary enclosing me and the Monster King within appeared. The Monster King struck against the boundary full on. It momentarily jolted the powers in my body. The intense pain made me to cough out another mouthful of blood. I needed to release all of the rampant powers in my body.

“The God King bestowed upon me the Sky God’s horn. My horn’s roar will pierce through the nine heavens.” A white light flashed and the Sky God’s horn emerged from my body and hovered at the left side of my body. I took in another deep breath to calm the rampant powers in my body. I took the time where the Monster King hadn’t snapped out of his shock to chant loudly, “The God King bestowed upon me the Titan God’s hammer. I will shake the heavens and move the earth to protect the righteous path. The God King bestowed upon me the Lightning God’s shield. Even ten thousand blades shall not stop me. The God King bestowed upon me the Wind God’s bow. My ethereal arrows will flash rapidly and violently.” The Titan God’s hammer, Lightning God’s shield, and the Wind’s God bow consecutively appeared in my surroundings after I chanted. Even though the five powers of the respective divine wills still filled my body, after the divine instruments had been summoned by my chant, the Holy Sword and Radiant God’s power suppressed the five divine wills, temporarily returning the calmness of my body.

“Monster King, I’ll represent the God King to eliminate you today. The God King bestowed upon me the Radiant Holy Sword. It shall shine with the soaring radiance of the vault of the heavens.” A silver power appeared before me, instantly forming the Holy Sword’s shape.

The Monster King suddenly calmed down. He seemed to have discovered a way to deal with me. He sealed his palms before his chest and closed his eyes. Hai Shui’s goddess like body hovered in mid air before he chanted, “Endless death and grudges, follow my command as the Monster race’s King that governs the heaven and earth, monsters that could annihilate everything appear and use your boundless grudges to eliminate

all life forms before you to spread the death aura of my Monster race throughout the world! Burst forth the monstrous power to engulf everything—The Monster King's summoning!!!” Following his chant, the gray aura beside the Monster King's body constantly formed into monster's shapes before gradually entering his body. The gray aura from his body gave off a terrifying deathly aura that seemed to be continuously fusing with the Monster King's body.

I wasn't in the slightest bit affected by the Monster King's appearance. I loudly chanted, “I represent the War God, Sky God, Titan God, Lightning God, Wind God, and Radiant God! Great God King, please bestow me your unlimited divine power to enable me to fuse all of the divine powers as one, in order to uphold justice in the world, to eliminate all sinister beings to return peace and harmony to the world—Forbidden Symphony of the Gods' Awakening!” Six divine phantoms appeared at my back. They slowly combined themselves. After constant infusion, my sight suddenly became white. The six divine phantoms fused together to have enormous blue, white, yellow, red, green and gold light pillars that soared towards the sky. The six divine powers that filled my entire body was constantly being absorbed by the light pillar that extended towards the sky. At this conjuncture, I unexpectedly was in exceptional comfort.

## Chapter 28: Solo Symphony

The six coloured light pillars rapidly revolved while they constantly clambered up. They had already started to gradually fuse with each other. The powers this time were different from the previous as it was much stronger. The sinister clouds in the sky got blown away by that power. The ground quaked constantly. All the monsters stopped their attack as they shifted their gazes to the Monster King and I. The people at the Ström Fortress were astonished by the sight before them. There were also a lot of soldiers that were seeing this sight for the second time. Zhan Hu, Xiu Si, Gao De, Xin Ao and Dong Ri were stunned as they didn't expect that I would activate the world's strongest forbidden spell solitarily. The newly appeared sunlight was dimmer than the dazzling light pillars and the pure clouds were embellished with six colours.

I hollered loudly and brandished my right hand that wore the God's guard protector. A gold hexagon appeared in the sky with constant flickering of gold light rays. This was the last component of the spell to enable the symphony to exert its full potential. The magnificent light rays had spread throughout the sky and the peerless divine powers filled the land. Currently, the might of the forbidden spell was fully displayed. I was surprised to discover that even though the prowess of the forbidden spell was so strong, I, who had initiated it, was able to control its direction.

The Monster King's complexion paled as his deathly aura before him was negligible, in compared to the symphony. I shouted with all my might, "Go to hell, you fucking bastard!" Under my control, the six light pillars suddenly charged towards the monster King, who was expressing a totally terrified expression. The Monster King cried out as he tried to make his final struggle. He extended both of his hands and shot a black fog at me that was incomparable to the six light pillars. I coldly smiled as I continued to make the six light pillars continue to move towards the Monster King.

There wasn't any collision sounds as the demonic spell from the Monster King had already been completely engulfed by the Monster King.

When the life of the Monster King was going to be extinguished under the might of the forbidden spell, the Demon King's sinister eyes suddenly turned back to clear blue eyes. Hai Shui's voice was heard as she asked in agony, "Big Brother Zhang Gong, are you really going to kill me?"

My entire body shuddered violently and deviated the forbidden spell a little at my will. The forbidden spell moved past Hai Shui's body at lightning speed. Hai Shui's body greatly jolted and a vast amount of demonic aura escape, even though it wasn't a direct hit. It was too late to regret that I didn't use this opportunity to kill the Monster King for good. The powers in my body had mostly shriveled as I gasped profusely to regain my breath. It was as I had expected that Hai Shui's eyes turned back to red. The Monster King's neither sinister nor clear voice sounded. "You're still too naive. Just die!" He formed into a grey fog as he charged towards me and landed a blow heavily on my chest.

Everything in my surrounding flew past me. Under the attack of the Monster King, I couldn't help as it greatly shook my body. But I was amazed to find that the Monster King's attack didn't bring me much harm. I, who had thought that I would meet my demise, felt that my life wasn't disappearing. My originally dimmed multi-coloured life flame unexpectedly lit up again under the stimulation from the Monster King's attack. I was constantly absorbing powers. At my will, I hovered in mid air again as I looked at the alarmed Monster King.

The Monster King looked unbelievably at both of his hands as he muttered, "Why? Why have my powers decreased this much?"

I coldly looked at him as I said, "You have reaped what you sowed. Even though my forbidden spell didn't take your life, your demonic power had been greatly diminished by the forbidden spell's power."

The Monster King coldly sneered. "Brat, the previous forbidden spell indeed was capable in killing me, but your greatest opportunity had been wasted. You no longer have the chance to resist me." Upon saying that, the Monster King extended his arms horizontally and with the red light in his eyes intensified, the dazed monsters that were on the ground exploded one after the other, forming grey fogs to surge towards the Monster King.

I was greatly alarmed as I knew he was fusing his powers. If I allowed him to recover his powers, I wouldn't be his match. Thinking about that, I charged towards the Monster King with all of my might to thrust the Holy Sword in my hand into the chest of the Monster King. The Monster King coldly looked at me and when I was 5 meters apart from him, his body suddenly moved backwards. His speed was similar to mine so we just formed a scenario of one chasing while the other escapes in the sky as I persisted in chasing after him. My heart constantly sunken as even though the burning of life force could continuously supply me with powers, I clearly felt that the life flame was already starting to burn out, while the Monster King's power slowly increased instead.

"Heh!" The Monster king suddenly stopped moving to punch violently towards my Holy Sword. I was blown away from being unprepared and coughed a mouthful of blood as the result.

The Monster King laughed as he said coldly, "Brat, just go and meet your maker!" He transformed his body into a faint dark figure as he charged towards me. The demonic aura locked my body in place, making it impossible to make any movements. However, at this critical moment, the five previously suppressed divine powers gradually recovered. Even though the forbidden spell consumes a lot of its power, their power were still able to tear my body apart. The Holy Sword also seemed to be in a swamp as it was difficult to mobilise it. I just watched the hand of the Monster King that brought along a grey aura grabbed towards me. The demonic sinister aura covered my entire body.

There were two figures that suddenly flew out from the Ström Fortress and headed towards the Monster King and I. They were Xiao Rou and Mu Zi. But with their speed and even if they caught up in time, with the current condition of the Monster King, they were just wasting their lives.

When the sharp claws of the Monster king reached just 33 centimeters before me, his body suddenly stopped. The Monster King's eyes abruptly became exceptionally strange as his red eyes constantly changed from red to blue and vice versa. The Monster King yelled in fury, "God damn it!" He retracted his claws that headed to me as he held his head in his hands,

bitterly groaning.

## Chapter 29: Star Burst

The seal on my body hadn't been resolved so I could just stare at the Monster King that was in agony. What was happening to him? Ah! Could it be Hai Shui's will?

Suddenly, halos of green light ray was constantly emitted from Hai Shui's body, but it still was heading towards me. This sight before me made me think back to when I first met Hai Shui. At that time, we met at the fighting arena and these green halos were the Xin Family's Absolute Disruption spell that left me at a loss on how to deal with it. The green light halos constantly appeared and tightly enclosed around Hai Shui's body. The restriction on my body suddenly vanished and the Monster King no longer had the ability to deal with me.

"Big Brother Zhang Gong, quickly....quickly take this opportunity to finish him. Hurry up! I can't restrict him much longer."

I looked stunned at the delicate and lovable body that was being restricted by the green halos. Tears flowed uncontrollably as I raised the Holy Sword. My previously steady hands shook constantly. The person before me currently wasn't the Monster King, but Hai Shui that loved me deeply. How could I kill her now?

"Big Brother Zhang Gong, quickly attack me! I can't hold him back much longer. Stop hesitating. It won't matter much if I died solitarily as it's enough for me for you to continue living well. Just hurry up! It can't be that you wish for the total extermination of all the races in this world right?" Hai Shui shouted, sobbing.

My heart greatly shuddered. That was right, how could I allow the extermination of all the races due to being soft hearted?! "Hai Shui, don't worry. I'll be accompanying you. Ah!!" I shouted and circulated the remnants of all of my remaining power in my body, making the burning of life spell form to reach its limit. The multi-coloured life force regained its splendor, completely suppressing the five divine powers. With my body and sword as one identity, I thrust towards Hai Shui's delicate body. The silver ray of the Holy Sword intensified. The Holy Sword accurately

pierced into Hai Shui's heart. The originally constant struggling body instantly stopped moving and grey fogs emitted from the wound. I distinctly felt that the Monster King was fighting his death with all his might against the might of the formidable Holy Sword.

Mu Zi and Xiao Rou immediately flew to our sides and looked at a loss at us. They didn't know what to say at this moment.

Blood continuously flowed out from Hai Shui's mouth. The green halos that surrounded her body disappeared. Hai Shui's small delicate hand touched my face as she asked gently in gasps, "Big Brother Zhang Gong, do you love me?" Tears uncontrollably flowed down my face. I replied shakily, "Love.. I love you, Hai Shui. I always will."

A satisfied smile was expressed on Hai Shui's charming face as she said in gasps, "That's good enough. I'm satisfied with your promise. Hai Shui will now leave without regret....." Two trials of sparkling and translucent tears flowed down Hai Shui's face before she suddenly pushed me away and shouted lovably, "Star Burst!"

Teacher Di, who was in the far distance at the fort, stood up abruptly as he looked startled at Hai Shui. "The Xin Family's ultimate spell, Star Burst, that enables the caster to kill their enemies along with themselves."

"Hong!!!!!!" After a loud explosion was heard, I had blankly looked at Hai Shui's body and the Holy Sword exploded so intensely, that Hai Shui didn't leave any ashes nor clothings.

She left just like that. All of the demonic aura emitting from Hai Shui's body disappeared with Hai Shui's self destruction spell. The monsters on the land metamorphosed into grey fog as they gradually vanished into mid air.

Xiao Rou suddenly moved in a flash to where Hai Shui had self exploded with peculiar flashing light rays in her eyes.

Mu Zi moved to my side and supported my body. "Zhang Gong, don't be overwhelmed by your grief. How's your body condition?"

My divine power was no longer able to keep the other divine powers in my body in place and my life force was burning out. I kissed Mu Zi's forehead lightly as I said mournfully, "Mu Zi, I won't be able to make it. You must take care of yourself. I'll head to find Hai Shui." Upon saying that, I pushed Mu Zi away and surged all of my powers outward as I soared into the sky. I relaxed my body and freely allowed the divine powers in my body to wreak havoc. I had already accomplished my task so it was time for me to go. I didn't want Mu Zi to look at my corpse after I died so I must leave.

"No! Zhang Gong, please don't do this to me!"

"Master!!!!"

Mu Zi and Xiao Rou's shouts was heard from beneath me, but with their speed, how could they catch up with me? I had chosen to die in the sky as the surge of the divine powers might hurt them.

Mouthful after mouthful of blood flowed from my mouth and feebleness struck my body. I was really tired. I just wanted to sleep now. I hope that when I awoke, I would be able to meet up with Hai Shui.

.....

Mu Zi and Xiao Rou frantically tried to fly after Zhang Gong, but no matter how they tried, they couldn't catch up with him. Zhang Gong's body became increasingly smaller in their view. Suddenly, with a flash of white light, Zhang Gong momentarily disappeared.

.....

I gradually opened my eyes to find myself in a hazy white world. The War God's armour, Sky God's horn, Titan God' hammer, Lightning God's shield, Wind God's bow, excluding the Holy Sword, laid in my surroundings. Each of the divine instruments were giving off different coloured light rays, similar to the divine wills that Mi Jia Lie had passed to me.

"Am I dead?" I looked at my seemingly unharmed body.

"No, my child, you haven't pass on." A familiar benevolent voice

sounded.

I was shocked. “Are...Are you the God King?”

“That’s right, my child. You didn’t let me down as you eliminated the clone of the Monster King, resulting in the drastic decrease in the power of the Monster King. We have also completely obliterated the Monster king’s body on our side with the combined divine powers of my powers with the other gods. Thank you for what you have done, my child. However, you were too reckless. You had used your body to withhold all six divine powers. You greedy bastard! If I didn’t come in time, you would have died. Even though I rule over the gods, I still don’t have the ability to revive the dead.”

## Chapter 30: God King

The Monster King's matter had finally been resolved and I was rescued by the God King. However, I wasn't the slightest bit happy as Hai Shui had died because of me! The God King had also said that he didn't have the power to revive the dead. This was to say that Hai Shui wouldn't be able to return to my side. Why? Why did this happen? Hai Shui was such a kind hearted girl. Why did she had to die?

The God King said, "Child, you had accomplished such an ordeal task. I'm really happy for that. Currently, the human race already thinks that you have already passed on. Why don't you stay in the God race then? Since you have inherited Mi Jie Lie's position, you'll become the new battle angel's leader, the new Radiant God. In this God realm, you'll have endless life."

"No!!!" I yelled in sadness. "No, I don't want eternal life. I don't want anything."

The God King seemed to be stunned for a moment. "My child, you should think it through carefully. A lot of people have dreamed to be able to become a god!"

I shook my head with sadness. "No, God King, I don't want to become a god nor do I want to have eternal life. I just want to be with my family and friends. You're the God King. Are you really out of alternatives in helping me revive my friends? It's just a tiny request from me. Please grant me this wish of mine."

The God King sighed. "Child, I understand your current feelings, but I had mentioned it previously that that is out of my powers! I'll agree to any of your request, except that."

I dejectedly knelt to the ground as I looked at the divine instruments, staying silent for a long time.

"Child, please don't be like this. Your contribution to the world, to all of the races, and to our God race has given rise to the survival of both worlds. Where there's a gain, there's also loss. Please state your request."

I took in a deep breath. “God King, I hope that you’ll withdraw all of the divine instruments and allow me to return to the human realm. I also don’t want eternal life. I just want to be an ordinary human and finish a not too long journey with my family and friends.”

The God King exclaimed., “What?! You also don’t want to have eternal life?”

I seriously nodded. “Eternal life doesn’t mean much to me. If my family and friends all died before me, what is the use of living on? Please grant me my wish.”

After a moment, the God King replied, “Alright, since you have made up your mind, I won’t continue to force you. Zhang Gong, you’ll forever be a friend to our God race.”

After a light flashed, my entire body was so warm and was in indescribable comfort. It was like taking a bath in a sea of light. “Zhang Gong, I’ve withdrawn the six divine weapons from your body, but still left you with the Radiant God’s powers. Your life force has already completely recovered. Return and do as you wish. I’ve got something to tell you. The spirit of the girl that was possessed by the Monster King hasn’t dissipated. You will still have the opportunity to meet her again in the future.”

I was shocked and just as I wanted to ask him, my body was enveloped in intense light rays. With a flash of light, everything before me turned white and everything disappeared.

.....

Even though the Monster race had been eradicated, the entire Ström Fortress was in despair as the Child of Light, Zhang Gong Wei, who had saved the world, had sacrificed his young life for the world’s peace and harmony.

Lao Lun Di caressed Mu ZI and Xiao Rou’s head with tears in his eyes. “Good children, stop crying. When a person passes on, they won’t be able to return. Zhang Gong is my one and only disciple but was also my pride. He had sacrificed his life to save everyone. His death carries a heavy

weight.”

Lao Lun Di’s consolation didn’t stop everyone from crying, but made everyone wail instead. Zhang Gong had managed to kill the Monster King by unhesitantly burning his life force. His action had greatly touched everyone’s heart.

“Report!!” A dispatched solver hurriedly entered the Commander’s division. “Reporting, there’s a peculiar phenomenon happening in the sky.”

Everyone were alarmed and Chuan Song Zhen asked, “What phenomenon? Quickly describe it!”

“There was a patch of coloured clouds that suddenly appeared in the sky and had stopped above the fort.”

Everyone looked at each other before Zhan Hu said, “Let’s head out and check it out.” Everyone from the God Protector Domain and the leaders of the armies from the three kingdoms simultaneously headed out of the Commander’s division. It was as what the soldier had reported. There was a patch of coloured cloud in the sky. It looked exceptionally mesmerising under the sunlight.

Chuan Song Zhen ordered heavily, “Pass down my order that every troop should be on standby and to be on alert.” The appearance of the Monster race had already made everyone easily fearful.

“I don’t think that’s necessary Teacher Zhen. It can’t be that you don’t want me to return right?” A voice that everyone couldn’t be more familiar with was heard. A gold light ray shone from the coloured cloud and moved before everyone like lightning.

“Zhang Gong!”

When I looked at the tears covered faces of the crowd, I said smilingly, “I’ve made everyone worried. I’ve returned.”

Mu Zi and Xiao Rou jumped into my embrace and Mu Zi shouted crying, “Where did you go? You made me worried to death.”

I caressed Mu Zi's long hair and smiled, "Silly girl, everything has passed. I just went to tour the God realm. The only pitiful thing is that Hai Shui....."

"God realm!" Everyone instantly exclaimed.

## Chapter 31: Epilogue

Two years later, in a small village at the outskirts of Senke City, Hai Shui, father, and I were anxiously waiting outside the house.

That was correct, it was Hai Shui. After I returned to the fort, Xiao Rou had told me that even though Hai Shui had died, she had a special ability after becoming nine tailed—Engulf. She was able to absorb Hai Shui's soul into her body, so her current body had her own soul and Hai Shui's soul, which was in a deep slumber. Following that, we went to gather the essential components for Xiao Rou to change into a human. Xiao Rou was finally able to change into a human from her fox form under the support of my divine powers. Hai Shui's soul awakened in the process as well. Hence, the human form that Xiao Rou had changed to was Hai Shui's appearance.

Even though Hai Shui had lost her previous body and magic powers, she could still stay with us, and to us, there was nothing that could make us more jubilant.

Since the God Protector Domain had shown remarkable performance during the battle with the monster race, it had received the recognition from all the races of the world. The God Protector Domain had thus became a domain other than the three human kingdoms. The domain had maintained to be 10,000 stronghold. The God Protector Domain was also known as the Waitner Domain. Waitner meaning Holy in the Demon race's language. I also became the publicly recognised leader of the Waitner Domain, the so called “lord” of the domain. But how could I, who loved freedom, be restricted to such a small place? Which is why when it was late in the night one day, I left a letter before sneakily heading out with Mu Zi and Hai Shui to my hometown.

The blissful thing was that during the wreckage of the monster race, no dens appeared near my hometown, so my parents were safe. When they saw me bring back two exceptional wives, the two elders became so happy that they couldn't keep their mouth shut.

Xiao Jin was currently staying in a valley not far from the village. Even

though his father had passed the Dragon race to him, that fellow had gotten used to a free and easy life style so how could he withstand being restricted? He learned from me and snuck out of the Dragon Valley and found me by my aura.

We held a simple wedding at my village. There was no one here that didn't know about me being the Child of Light that had saved the world. Following that, to hide from the "pursuers" of the domain's brothers, I had brought Mu Zi, Hai Shui, Xiao Jin, and also Xiao Rou to roam the lands. It wasn't until nine months earlier that Mu Zi got impregnated by me so we headed back to my hometown.

"Why hasn't she given birth yet? Why?" I anxiously paced back and forth.

Hai Shui consoled me, "Don't worry, with mother's help, Elder sister Mu Zi will be fine."

"Wahhhh!!!!" Just when Hai Shui said that, a baby's cry was heard from the room. I was instantly excited. I tightly hugged Hai Shui and exclaimed, "She has finally given birth!"

Father muttered, "I... I've a grandchild."

What made us curious was that the room door hadn't opened. Another loud cry from a baby was heard and we were stunned. My father and I looked at each other as we cried out simultaneously, "Twins!"

Finally, the door opened and mother excitedly came out with the wet nurse. "Great news! Great news! Zhang Gong, Mu Zi had given birth to two sons."

My mind blanked. Two sons.....I had two sons now and I also become a father. I immediately dashed into the room to the bedside where Mu Zi was lying. Mu Zi obviously looked feeble, but her spirit was still great.

"Zhang Gong, we've our own children now."

I emotionally nodded and gripped onto Mu Zi's small hand as I said, "Thank you. Mu Zi, thank you so much, I'm finally a father."

Mu Zi tilted her head and asked, “Quickly look at our children. Why do I feel that the two brothers aren’t identical?!”

I followed Mu Zi’s glance to the pair of small babies that were lying in separate bundles of clothes. One was obviously well prepared, but the other was just done up at the last minute in a small blanket. From their appearances, the two kids looked identically alike, but they had different auras. I circulated the divine powers in my body to meticulously check their bodies. I was surprised to discover that the two children’s attribute was light and dark respectively.

“Ah! Mu Zi, you’ve given me a pair of light and dark elemental twins!”

## The End

\*

### Authors note from ~2004

(Author: Child of Light had finally ended. This book took me a year to complete and it neared 80,000 words. The journey in writing this book had several ups and downs. This book had suffered from the publisher closing down, having the website shut down, and other similar ordeals, but I had persisted in finishing this book. This was mainly due to the support from my vast readers. If Child of Light didn't have high reviews, I doubt I would have been able to finish this book. Thus, I'll now thank all of my friends that had constantly supported me. Similarly, I also want to give my thanks to my girlfriend's support as she had always stayed by my side, supporting me, giving me the motivation to continue.

Child of Light is my first novel and several people had criticised me for it in the forums! They vilified me! They also said that this book was extremely lousy. I admit that my writing was indeed terrible for this book, but this is my first novel after all. Moreover, this book was totally meant to serve as entertainment for everyone. Its purpose is to relax the tense life of everyone's busy lives, as I had mentioned during my introduction to the writer's world, so why must you detailedly pick on this book? My second book, Mad God (Kuang Shen), is much better than Child of Light. I have also inserted more feelings into that story. Child of Light has ended and Mad God (Kuang Shen), is still being updated. I hereby swear to everyone that as long as it's my book, I'll persist to update it to its last chapter and word.

Lasty, I would like to make an announcement for my new book titled, 'The Kind Death God' (Shan Liang de Si Shen), that has already been published on Qidian. The web address is [http://www.cmfu.com/showbook.asp?bl\\_id=26423](http://www.cmfu.com/showbook.asp?bl_id=26423). I hope that all my supportive friends will give it a shot and hopefully be able to feel the slight changes in my writing. Furthermore, I have invested a lot into The Kind Death God novel. So much so as my lumbar vertebra shoulder disk

slipped due to it. Sigh~ That would definitely be the result from writing 16 hours per day! Everyone mustn't follow my steps, especially those online gamer friends. I shall advise you that the most important thing in life is the body. I hope that everyone will stay in good health and all the best.- Tang Jia San Shao]

# Credits

Translator: [Radiant Translations](#)

Epub: [Estevam](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)